

戰時英文讀本
A WARTIME ENGLISH READER

FOR

HIGH SCHOOLS & COLLEGES

許祖惇編



東南書局印行

戰時英文讀本

許祖惇編

A WARTIME ENGLISH READER
FOR HIGH SCHOOLS & COLLEGES

COMPILED & ANNOTATED

BY

HSU TSU-TUN

First Edition



3 1764 3687 5

東南書局印行

To
My Deceased Father

PREFACE

In teaching his students, the compiler has always felt the want of an English reader which will not only stimulate the keen interest of the students in learning English but also afford them a practical vocabulary. It is too often the case that many students who have studied English for five or six years can neither read a newspaper or magazine, nor speak or write in English an account of what happens in their own day. This, perhaps, may be laid to the fact that the province of the English readings for those students are generally confined to pure literature, and scientific or philosophical writings that seem rather dull and useless to them. Anyhow, there has been the neglect of the interest and the needs of the students on the part of the authors. Furthermore, in the English course of any kind of examination, the students are usually asked to write or translate an article or the like on current events. Most of them fail simply because their vocabulary on this side is extremely small.

P R E F A C E

Accordingly, they complain that ordinary English readers are unavailable for them and that a suitable substitute is in urgent demand.

In view of this, the compiler has worked out the present volume which is intended to adapt to the needs of the students as mentioned above. In preparing this book, he has all the while kept in mind the viewpoint as well as the difficulties of the students. Special heed, therefore, has been given to the selection of the materials.

This book aims at presenting to its readers lives of the leading political figures of the world, descriptions of China's Armed Resistance and National Reconstruction, accounts of the inside conditions of the belligerent powers, discussions on international affairs and organization, and wartime literature. All productions herein contained, whether in the form of articles, speeches, stories, poems, essays, diaries, or editorials, are carefully and impartially selected from books, pamphlets, magazines and newspapers published during recent years. As this book is the result of three years' experience in teaching English, there is reason to hope that it

P R E F A C E

will prove of service, more or less. It may either serve as a textbook or as a supplementary reading for both high school and college students. If one digests this small volume, I am sure he will derive great benefit from it and thus enrich his vocabulary.

There are altogether forty lessons in this book. Longer lessons have been arranged after the shorter ones, more difficult pieces coming next to the easier. Annotations in Chinese have been given at the end of each lesson to facilitate the work of the students so that they will find themselves free from being embarrassed with troublesome words, phrases and idioms.

Thanks are due to Professor Huang Hsueh Ching, Professor Hu Chuan Bing, and Professor Chung Jen Tsen for their valuable assistance in the compilation of this book. If it should be worthy of a second edition, the compiler would heartily welcome any corrections and criticisms tending to its improvement.

T. T Hsu

PREFACE

Contents

	Page
1. The Eight-Point Peace Programme By President Roosevelt & Prime Minister Churchill ... (1)	
2. China Fights for World Peace By Generalissimo Chiang (7)	
3. What Will Tomorrow's World Be Like? By Mahatma Gandhi. (13)	
4. Death Dives By Y. C. Chen (20)	
5. Human Material of the Belligerents By Vincent Sheean (28)	
6. The Dragon Awakes From "China at War" (33)	
7. Franklin Delano Roosevelt From "Spectator" (41)	
8. Why the Allies Were Defeated in the Pacific By P. S. Hsu (47)	
9. Profiteers—Enemies of Salaried Men (55)	
10. From Paddyfield to Battlefield (61)	
11. Their Days Are Numbered	

	From "Hankow Herald"	(68)
12.	Whither America	
	By Wendell L. Willkie	(74)
13.	Mulan : A Poem	
	By H. Y. Yang	(81)
14.	Stalin Talks to Rosita Forbes	
	From "Answers"	(87)
15.	Chin's Wartime Movies	
	From "China at War"	(94)
16.	Portrait of a Patriot	
	From "China at War"	(104)
17.	Men Against the World	
	By Marc P. Gyeene	(114)
18.	Life Story of the Generalissimo	
	By John Gunther	(123)
19.	Winston Churchill	
	From "Time"	(134)
20.	Greetings to the Golden Gate International Exposition at San Francisco.....By Wang Chung-hui.....	(144)
21.	China Gets to Work	
	By Pearl S. Buck	(155)
22.	Britain Doesn't Fight with Blood-Curdling Threats	
	By Winston Churchill	(163)
23.	America Must Fight	
	By Walter Lippmann	(170)
24.	Inside France Today	
	By Joseph Congress	(179)

25. America's Role in the Far East	
By Philip J. Jaffe	(189)
26. China Gets Set for Victory	
From "China Today"	(200)
27. Universities Withstand Japanese Fire in China	
From "China at War"	(210)
28. In Oppressed "Manchukuo"	
From "China at War"	(222)
29. The Lesson of France	
By John Ganther	(233)
30. China's Foreign Relations during the Present Hostilities	
By Wang, Chung-hui	(248)
31. Hitler : Strategist	
By Captain Liddell Hart	(263)
32. Dr. Sun Yat-sen	
By L. T. Chen	(279)
33. China's Spiritual Mobilization	
By Madame Chiang Kai Shek	(294)
34. Millions Mobilize	
From "China at War"	(308)
35. Japan Between Two Wars : A Survey	
By Mirian S. Farley	(321)
36. The League of Nations	
From "The World Voice"	(338)
37. Mussolini Grows Old	
By Frederic Sondern	(354)
38. B Autterfly in the Fog	

By Latrobe Carroll	(376)
39. The Dark Hour	
By Wilbur Daniel Steele	(403)
40. With the German Armies : A War Diary	
By William L. Shirer.....	(424)

A WARTIME ENGLISH READER

FOR

HIGH SCHOOLS & COLLEGES

Lesson 1

The Eight-Point Peace Programme

(The declaration which Mr. Roosevelt, President
of the U.S.A., and Mr. Churchill, Premier of
Great Britain agreed to issue)

"The President of the United States and the Prime Minister, Mr. Churchill, representing His Majesty's Government, have met at sea, and have been accompanied by officials of their two Governments including high ranking officials of their military, naval and air services.

"The President and the Prime Minister had several conferences. They have considered the dangers to world civilization arising from the policy of military domination by conquest to which the Hitlerite Government of Germany and the other

Governments associated with it have embarked upon, and they have made clear the steps which other countries are taking for the safety in the face of these dangers.

“They deem it right to make known certain common principles in the national policy of their respective countries on which they base their hopes for the better future of the world.

(1) Our countries seek no aggrandisement, territorial or other;

(2) They desire to see no territorial changes that do not concur with the express wishes of the people concerned;

(3) They respect the rights of all peoples to choose the form of government under which they will live, and they wish to see sovereign rights and self-government restored to those who have been forcibly deprived of them;

(4) They will endeavour, with due respects to the existing obligations, to further all steps agreed upon by nations, great or small, conquered or unconquered, on equal terms to trade in the raw materials of the world which are needed for

economic prosperity;

(5) They desire to bring about the fullest co-operation between all nations in the economic field with the object of securing an improved labour standard, economic advancement and social security;

(6) After the final destruction of Nazi tyranny, they hope to see an established peace which will afford to all nations the means of dwelling in safety within their own boundaries and will afford an assurance that all men in all lands can and may live on their lives in freedom from fear and want;

(7) Such a peace will enable all men to traverse the high sea and land without hindrance;

(8) They believe that all nations of the world, for realistic as well as spiritual reasons, must come to the abandonment of the use of force, for peace cannot be maintained if the land, sea or air continue to be employed by nations to threaten aggression outside their countries. Pending the establishment of a wider and permanent system of security, the disarmament of such

nations is essential. They will likewise aid and encourage all other practicable measures which will give peace to people from the crushing burden of armaments”

HELPS TO STUDY

VCOABULARY

- programme 綱領
 premier 首相
 issue 公布
 prime minister 首相
 his majesty 陛下
 high ranking official 高級官員
 Hitlerite Government of Germany 德國的希特勒政府
 other Governments associated with it 與之聯合之
 其他政府
 embark upon 從事
 step 步驟
 in the face of these dangers 遭遇此等危險時
 make known 公布
 common principles 共同之原則
 respective 各個的
 seek 尋求

aggrandisement 擴張
territorial 領土的
concur with 與…符合
express wishes 明白之願望
the people concerned 有關之民族
respect 尊重
right 權利
sovereign rights 主權
self-government 自治權
restore 恢復
to be forcibly deprived of 被強迫剝奪
with due respects to 對於…相當尊重
existing 現存的
obligation 義務
further 促進
on equal terms 以平等之關係
raw material 原料
economic prosperity 經濟之繁榮
bring about 造成
fullest co-operation 最充份之合作
in the economic field 在經濟方面；經濟界
with the object of 以…為目的
improved 改善的

labour standard 勞工標準
economic advancement 經濟進展
social security 社會安全
Nazi tyranny 納粹暴政(指希特勒式政治)
established peace 穩固之和平
afford an assurance 保證
enable 使能
from fear and want 無恐怖與貧乏
traverse 遊歷
high sea 公海
hindrance 阻礙
realistic 現實的
as well as 同
abandonment 拋棄
use of force 武力之使用
maintain 維持
pending 在……決定之前
a wider and permanent system of security 更廣大與永久性的安全制度
disarmament 解除武裝
essential 必要的
likewise 同樣
practicable measures 可實行的方法

from the crushing burden of armaments 從軍
備之重壓下

Lesson 2

China Fights For World Peace

By Generalissimo Chiang

On behalf of my 450,000,000 peace-loving but suffering fellowcountrymen, I wish to express to your Conference our gratitude for your efforts to stop Japan's ruthless war of aggression. Besides seizing 500,000 square miles of our territory in Manchuria six years ago, the Japanese have now invaded nine more provinces equivalent in size to the combined territory of Great Britain, France, Germany and Italy. Wherever the Japanese set their foot, Chinese men have been slaughtered; Chinese women have been outraged and then killed, and Chinese children have been murdered or orphaned. In areas still inaccessible to their infantry and artillery and beyond the range of their naval guns, the Japanese are sending bombing aeroplanes to pour death upon innocent people and

to destroy their homes, their industrial plants, and their institutions of mercy and learning. Japanese land, naval and air forces are every day extending their operations and the Japanese militarists' desire for conquest is insatiable.

Not only has Japan had not the slightest justification for her attack on China, but she clearly violated international law and the Nine Power Treaty of 1922 and the Anti-War Pact of 1926. In attempting to subjugate China, she has set at naught the rights and interests of all other Powers and defied the whole world which has by common agreement renounced war as an instrument of national policy. What Japan is doing is nothing less than the destruction of law, order and civilization and leading the world back into medieval barbarism.

We have been resisting the invader's attacks to the best of our ability and we will continue to defend ourselves even to the last man, to the last inch of our territory. Whatever may be our sacrifice, our determination will not be shaken. The fact that you have summoned this gathering

to devise means for curbing the madness and cruelty of Japanese militarists has given us new strength to combat their onslaught and new hopes for the final vindication of our rights.

We are fighting not only for our own liberty and existence and for the preservation of our own sovereignty and national integrity, but also for the sanctity of international treaties as well as for the common security of all nations. If Japan is permitted to tear up the treaties as scraps of paper and violate with impunity the territorial integrity of her neighbour which she pledged to respect, it will not be long before the world will be plunged into the greatest catastrophe yet known in human history.

Only a spontaneous and unmistakable manifestation of the concensus of world opinion coupled with concerted action of the most effective kind can awake Japan to the folly of prosecuting her headlong policy of aggression and the impossibility of a military conquest of China. Representing as you do a powerful section of the world population, your organization is in a position to help and

advance China's cause for peace and justice and to bring home to Japan the feelings of all peace-loving people against her action of slaughter and brigandage. When your common sentiments find expression in concrete measures directed towards the hastening of the end of Japanese aggression, your efforts for promoting international peace and human welfare will not have been exerted in vain.

HELPS TO STUDY

The above is a message by Generalissimo Chiang to International Peace Campaign Conference on February 11 1938.

VOCABULARY

peace-loving 愛和平的
 suffering 受難的
 on behalf of 代表
 ruthless 殘忍的
 fellow-countrymen 同胞(指同國之人)
 slaughter 屠殺
 outrage 強姦
 murder 謀害
 orphan(v) 使爲孤兒

in areas inaccessible to their infantry and
artillery 在彼等步兵與砲兵不能達到之地方
beyond the range of their naval guns 在彼等海
軍砲火所及之範圍以外
bombing aeroplane 轟炸機
operations 作戰
insatiable 貪得無厭的
slightest 最不充分的
justification 辯護之理由
violate 違犯
pour death upon innocent people 致無辜人民於
死地
institutions of mercy and learning 慈善機關與
學術機關
land, naval and air force 陸海空軍
Nine Power Treaty 九國公約
Anti-War Pact 非戰公約
subjugate 征服
set at naught 不顧
the rights and interests of other Powers 列強
之權益
defy 挑戰
renounce 拋棄

instrument 工具
national policy 國策
nothing less than 確係
medieval barbarism 中世紀之野蠻
to the best of one's ability 竭力
determination 決心
summon 召集
devise means 設法
curb 遏制
onslaught 進攻
vindication 證明
preservation 保持
sovereignty 主權
national integrity 國家之完整
sanctity 神聖
common security 共同之安全
tear up 撕毀
scraps of papers 碎紙
with impunity 無罪
pledge 保證
plunge into 陷入
catastrophe 災難
human history 人類歷史

spontaneous 出於自願的
 unmistakable 明白的
 consensus 一致
 world opinion 世界輿論
 coupled with 加以；與…配合
 concerted action 互相同意之行動
 can awake Japan to the folly of prosecuting
 her headlong policy and the impossibility of
 a military conquest of China 能使日本覺悟：實
 行鹵莽的侵略政策之不智及武力征服中國之不可能
 bring home 使明瞭
 brigandage 劫掠
 sentiment 情緒
 concrete measures 具體之方法
 in vain 徒然

Lesson 3

What Will To-morrow's World Be Like?

By Mahatma Gandhi

Perhaps never before has there been so much
 speculation about the future as there is to-day.
 Will our world always be one of violence? Will

there always be poverty, starvation, misery? Will we have a firmer and wider belief in religion, or will the world be godless? If there is to be a great change in society, how will that change be wrought? By war or revolution? Or will it come peacefully?

Different men give different answers to these questions, each man drawing the plan of to-morrow's world as he hopes and wishes it to be. I answer not only out of belief but out of conviction. The world of to-morrow will be a society based on non-violence. That is the first law; out of it all other blessings will flow. It may seem a distant goal, an impractical Utopia. But it is not in the least unobtainable, since it can be worked for here and now. An individual can adopt the way of life of the future—the non-violent way—without having to wait for others to do so. And if an individual can do it, cannot whole groups of individuals? Whole nations? Men often hesitate to make a beginning, because they feel that the objective cannot be achieved in its entirety. This attitude of mind is precisely our greatest obstacle to progress, an obstacle that each man, if he only wills it, can clear away.

Equal distribution—the second great law of to-morrow's world as I see it—grows out of non-violence. It implies not that the world's goods shall be arbitrarily divided up but that each man shall have the wherewithal to supply his natural needs, no more. As a crude example, if one man requires a quarter pound of flour per week and another needs five pounds, each should not be given arbitrarily a quarter-pound, or five pounds; both should be able to satisfy their wants.

Here we come to perhaps the most vital question connected with the shaping of to-morrow's world. How is this equal distribution to be brought about? Must the wealthy be dispossessed of all their holdings?

Non-violence answers no. Nothing that is violent can be of lasting benefit to mankind. Forcible dispossession would deprive society of many great gifts; the wealthy man knows how to create and build, his abilities must not be lost. Instead, he must be left in possession of his wealth so that he may use what he reasonably requires for his personal needs and act as trustee for the re-

mainder, to be expended for the benefit of society. There have been and are such men. To my mind, as soon as a man looks upon himself as a servant of society, earns for its sake, spends for its sake, then his earnings are good and his business venture is constructive.

But does not this whole idea of non-violence imply a change in human nature? And does history at any time record such a change? Emphatically it does. Many an individual has turned from the mean, personal, acquisitive point of view to one that sees society as a whole and works for its benefit. If there has been such a change in one man, there can be the same change in many.

I see no poverty in the world of to-morrow, no wars, no revolutions, no bloodshed. And in that world there will be a faith in God greater and deeper than ever in the past. The very existence of the world, in a broad sense, depends on religion. All attempt to root it out will fail.

HELPS TO STUDY

Mohandas Gandhi is still, at 71, India's greatest leader and the world's foremost example of a saint

in politics. His political technique of non-violence is rooted in his religious insistence that one must return good for evil, must hate the sin but not the sinner, and can win justice only by giving justice to the enemy. Spiritual integrity, sincerity and love of truth have won for him a unique position in the hearts of his countrymen. By a single word he could start civil disobedience again among 350,000,000 people. Known as Mahatma (great souled), he will be worshipped as a god when he dies.

VOCABULARY

- Mahatma Gandhi 聖雄甘地
 speculation 推想
 one of violence = a world of violence 暴力之世界
 poverty 貧窮
 starvation 飢餓
 misery 災禍
 firmer 更堅定的
 godless 無神的
 wrought (past participle of "work") 造成
 draw 擬訂
 conviction 深刻的信仰
 non-violence 非暴力
 blessing 幸福

a distant goal 不易達到之目標
Utopia 烏托邦(理想國)
in the least 絲毫
unobtainable 不可得到的
individual 個人
adopt 採取
without having to wait for 不必等待
hesitate 猶豫不決
entirety 全部
attitude 狀態
precisely 確定地
obstacle 阻礙
will it 有志于斯
clear away 除去
distribution 分配
as I see it 就余所見
imply 含……之意
arbitrarily 武斷地
wherewithal 必需之物
crude 粗淺的
a quarter pound 一磅四分之一
flour 麵粉
per week 每週

to satisfy their wants 滿足其需要
vital 重要的
connected with 關於
the shaping of to-morrow's world 未來世界之形成
to be dispossessed of all their holdings 被剝奪
彼等所有之財產
of lasting benefit 有永久之利益
forcible 強制的
gifts 天才
create 創造
to be left in 聽任之
trustee 被委託人
remainder 其餘的人
expend 用
to my mind 我以為
look upon one's self as 自視為
earn 賺
earnings 所得之錢
business venture 事業
constructive 有建設性的
it does=history records such a change.
emphatically 確然地
mean 鄙陋的

personal 只知有個人的
 acquisitive 貪得的
 point of view 見地
 see society as a whole 注目於整個社會
 work for its benefit 爲社會之利益而工作
 bloodshed 流血
 in a broad sense 於廣泛之意義上
 to root it out 根除之

Lesson 4

Death Dives

(From "China at War")

For months the Japanese aerial raiders visited Hankow, China's de facto capital since Nanking's walls fell to the enemy. Hankow is not so safe and unmolested as Nanking where the shells of the ground batteries burst all round the invading planes without the luck of winging one of the vultures of China's skies.

While 2,000,000 people in the three big Wuhan cities trembled for an hour in innumerable dugouts, the Japanese planes would usually pit the military

airfield with holes and blow some hapless peasants to atoms with miss-directed bombs. The military authorities could not risk sending planes into the air to drive off the attackers. China's new planes were too urgently needed on the battle-fronts, giving some encouragement to the Chinese armies by dealing the opposing Japanese troops doses of their own medicine.

But Nemesis was already warming for action. Late in January the Chinese Air Force had been reinforced by some biplane fighters so fast that they had no equals in the Far East. For a month China's pilots, who included men from all over the world returned to fight for their motherland, flew their new craft in battle practice. They were spoiling for an aerial duel with the invaders. All over China there were testimonials to the marksmanship of the Japanese bombers, in blackened cities and mounds of dead civilians. Something far greater than the thrill of impending combat surged in the hearts of the Chinese pilots: they were out for vengeance.

The morning of February 18 dawned clear and

peaceful in Hankow; but, ere the sun had dipped, the greatest aerial battle in Far Eastern history had been fought and twelve enemy engines of death had returned to the earth as shapeless masses of metal, their pilots charred embers. Fifteen huge bombers made the attack and above them, so high that they were mere flashing pinpricks in the sky, were their escorts—seventeen little combat planes. The attack seemed to be succeeding. The airfield lifted as though sprung by a giant landmine. Four days before, the prosperous city of Chengchow was struck by a great many bombs and in its debris were a thousand killed or maimed bodies.

Their mission completed, the Hankow raiders curved towards their distant base. Suddenly the Chinese planes struck like bolts from the blue. The air rocked with the sound of seventy aero engines roaring deafeningly as pilots dived, looped, sideslipped and climbed in hectic combat to the death. Plane after Plane plunged earthward like blazing funeral pyres. There were red balls on the wings of those planes—the insignia of Nippon and harbinger of carnage to China. In those

falling planes, belching a little smoke at first then bursting into scarlet flame ere the headlong death dive ended, were human beings, yet their terrible incineration caused no anguish to countless watchers below, homeless thousands of refugees driven from everything they loved by those selfsame aerial raiders from Japan, people who had seen the reverse picture, the mounds of the dead and dying, the blood-splashed wreckage, the dread panic of thousands which had followed air raids on undefended cities.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

death dives	消滅之疾降
aerial raider	空中襲擊者
de facto	事實上
unmolested	無煩擾的
shell	砲彈
ground battery	地面砲臺
burst	爆發
all round the invading planes	在侵入飛機之周圍
wing	使受傷

-
- vultures of China's skies 中國天空之兀鷹(指飛機)
Wuhan 武漢
tremble 戰慄
dugout 避彈地窟
pit 作坑
military airfield 軍用飛機場
blow--to atoms 炸成塵末
hapless 不幸的
miss-directed 方向錯誤的
bomb 炸彈
authority 當局
risk 冒險
drive off 逐去
urgently 急迫地
battle-front 戰線
deal 給
dose 一劑
medicine 藥
Nemesis 司報應之女神
warm for action 醞釀戰鬥
late in January 一月底
air force 空軍
biplane fighter 複葉戰鬥機

pilot 駕駛員
spoil for 渴望
an aerial duel 空中決鬥
all over China 全中國
testimonial 紀念物
marksmanship 善射
bomber 擲炸彈者
in blackened cities 在燒焦的城市中
mound 塚
civilian 平民
impending 臨頭的
combat 戰鬥
surge 洶湧
vengeance 復仇
ere 於……以前
dip 傾斜
aerial battle 空戰
Far Eastern 遠東的
enemy engine 敵機
shapeless masses 無定形的碎塊
char 燒焦
ember 餘燼
huge 巨大的

flashing 發閃光的
pinprick 針孔
escort 護送者
succeeding 連續
as though 宛如
sprung (present: spring) 轟炸
a giant landmine 一巨大之地雷
debris 被毀後之堆
maimed body 殘廢之軀體
struck like bolts 如箭落下
blue 青天
rock 震動
aero engine 飛機
roar 怒吼
deafeningly 震耳欲聾地
dive 疾降
loop 環迴飛翔
sideslip 側向滑行
climb 上昇
hectic 紛擾的
combat to the death 死戰
plunge 投入
earthward 地下

- blazing 燒着的
 pyre 火葬之柴堆
 insignia 標記
 Nippon 日本
 harbinger 先鋒
 carnage 屠殺
 belch 噴出
 burst into 突現
 scarlet 深紅的
 headlong 頭向前
 human being 人
 incineration 火葬
 anguish 痛苦
 countless 無數的
 watcher 注視者
 refugee 難民
 selfsame 同樣的
 the reverse picture 相反之景像(指中國人民被敵機
 炸斃)
 blood-splashed wreckage 濺血的殘餘
 panic 恐慌
 undefended cities 無防禦之城市

Lesson 5

Human Material of the Belligerents

By Vincent Sheean

The average German is a pretty good fellow. He is courageous and stolid; he endures hardships well. He is capable in all sorts of physical ways — with his hands and feet, and not only with his head.

But within this German character, with all its admirable qualities, there is one trait which is fatal to the rest. The German people is lacking in political sense. It is politically naive at best; politically stupid and gullible at worst.

Political scepticism is almost non-existent in Germany. The Nazi leaders are well aware of this fact, and yield to the temptation to be too clever, too masterful. When you know that a nation of eighty million people is going to believe anything you say, there is certainly very little inducement to tell the awkward or disastrous truth. Clever lies are the easier, and seem for a time to be the overwhelmingly successful thing to do,

This inordinate gullibility, which has been a German characteristic for centuries, can turn into fury when the full extent of the deception becomes clear. And then the Johanns and the Hanses are as likely to turn Hitler and his gang out of office as they got rid of the Kaiser and his government in 1918. But this time the kick may be a bit more drastic.

Against this people are ranged the British Empire and the French Republic, among whom types of human beings have been evolved in almost perfect political freedom for at least a hundred and fifty years. These people—ordinary Britons, ordinary Frenchmen—knew what they are defending.

John Bull has not the same mechanical or technical competence as the ordinary German. In some ways he is rather a muddler. He wastes a good deal of time in getting started; he uses the trial and error system rather more than it is necessary; he has developed this habit over the centuries, because freedom counts for more in his eyes than efficiency.

In this way he has something of a disadvantage at the outset of a long war. But he is the man who likes to do things properly, in good order, according to the best traditions and without too much fuss. He thinks flagwaving a little silly; he is not, usually, much given to the poses of heroism or self-sacrifice. And he insists on bringing his good humour, in fact his sense of humour, into everything even to the doors of death. This is the man who will last out the war. His is the kind of nerve that does not show much on the surface, but is as tough and enduring as steel.

The French can also endure, as they have shown innumerable times in their history, and particularly in the war of 1914-18. The French soldier is keen and brave, and every physically fit Frenchman is a trained soldier.

One of the main characteristics of both the ordinary Briton and the ordinary Frenchman is that they are well-informed. This is something they owe to their political institutions. The free press in both countries is telling the people about events as they take place. Nothing is kept back.

No attempt is made to deceive the people upon fundamental facts of the situation.

The same cannot be said for the average German, because his mind has been cut off from adequate information for the the past six years. Sooner or later, he is going to find out that he has been fooled, and his rage will turn not on foreigners, but on those who have fooled him, the Nazi leaders.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

human material 人材；人力

belligerent 交戰國

average 通常的

pretty (adv.) 頗

stolid 魯鈍的

trait 特性

political sense 政治意識

naive 天真的

at best 好到極點；從好處說

gullible 易欺的

at worst 壞到極點；從壞處說

-
- scepticism 懷疑
non-existent 不存在
Nazi 納粹黨(即德國國家社會黨)
inducement 誘導
overwhelmingly 分外地
inordinate 過度的
turn into 變成
fury 暴怒
the Johanns and the Hanses 德國國民(綽號)
turn Hitler and his gang out of office 逐希特勒與其奸黨於衙門以外
get rid of 除去
Kaiser 德皇
kick 反擊
drastic 激烈的
evolve 進化
John Bull 英國國民(綽號)
muddler 胡思亂想者
getting started 開端
trial and error system 嘗試錯誤之方法
count for more 更有價值
efficiency 效率
outset 開始

properly	正當地
tradition	慣習
fuss	大驚小怪
flagwaving	搖旗(吶喊)
given to	習於
pose	恣態
good humour	高興
sense of humour	幽默感
tough	頑強的
enduring	耐久的
well-informed	通曉世事；消息靈通
owe to	歸功於
institution	制度
keep back	隱瞞
adequate	充分的
sooner or later	遲早
fool (v.)	欺騙

Lesson 6

The Dragon Awakes

(From "China at War")

A gigantic movement is linking every village

in China in an united front against Japan. It is called the Association for Supporting Armed Resistance against Japan and the remarkable unity of thought and action which it is engendering will have a most valuable effect upon China's peasant millions when this war is ended. It can be labelled among the many blessings in disguise which Japan's invasion has caused in China.

The registration of all inhabitants takes place immediately after a village association is inaugurated and it is considered a very high honor to be elected to some official position. Usually a trained soldier is in the office when a branch association is formed and his immediate duty is to teach the people the use of arms for the defense of the township. An air raid alarm system is inaugurated, bombproof dugouts are constructed and rudiments of anti-poison-gas measures are taught. Men, women and children of all ages are schooled for their parts in guerilla warfare. Stretcher bearers are nominated and others are taught the elements of first aid.

When air raiders attack such villages where the people have received training there is no panic.

As soon as the warning bells are sounded, members of the volunteer police force turn out immediately to ensure that all people remain under cover until the all-clear is sounded. The first-aid units stand by at their posts, but only infrequently are their stretchers required. The people needed little training in air raid drill, for the "bamboo wireless" had soon warned everyone through the length and breadth of the land that Japanese birdmen were synonymous with mass killing. Now, when the Japanese raiders are up, the Chinese go underground and thus saved their lives even if they lose their homes.

At times when uneasy rumors are rife, members of the association ascertain the true situation and endeavor to pacify the alarm of the people.

The doctrine of mutual help is being patterned in their lives, that representing a valuable widening of the family system. The economic life of the communities is not being neglected. Assistance is being given to farmers by the association's rural service committee whose members have mostly received training in agricultural colleges. Lessons

on more scientific agricultural methods and the use of modern farming implements are given at regular intervals. Mass educational classes to banish the almost universal illiteracy among the peasants take place in temples, monasteries or village meeting places.

A special committee has charge of the registering of all inhabitants, all farming implements and livestock. Thus confusion will be avoided if it becomes necessary to shift people hurriedly from place to place. Close contact is made with neighboring villages and distant towns so that, if danger threatens, an orderly evacuation will become comparatively easy and very unlike those aimless, tragic stampedes which always preceded Japanese advances in the early months of the war.

Under this new life of restraint which is being imposed upon the villagers for their own safety, definite laws have been framed to cover departures from village to village. Now-a-days permission to travel must be secured. Very special reasons must be advanced by would-be travellers who belong to the village militia, or people whose

absence would cause the complete or partial stoppage of the production of certain essential products.

So widespread has the association become that now it may be regarded as one of the strongest lines of resistance against Japan's hopes of a quick subjugation of China.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

- mass movement 民衆運動
 an united front against Japan 反日聯合陣線
 the Association for Supporting Armed Resistance against Japan 抗日後援會
 unity of thought and action 思想與行動之一致
 engender 產生
 peasant millions 農民大眾
 label 標明
 blessings in disguise 似非而是之幸福
 registration 登記
 inauguration 成立
 official position 職位
 a trained soldier 一曾受訓練之兵士
 a branch association 分會

-
- township 市區或鎮區
air raid alarm 空襲警報
inaugurate 着手
bombproof dugout 防炸彈之地窟
rudiment 初步
anti-poison-gas 防毒氣
measure 方法
school (v.) 訓練
guerrilla warfare 游擊戰
stretcher bearer 昇牀担運者
nominate 指定
elements of first aid 救急之簡單方法
panic 恐慌
warning bell 警鐘
volunteer police force 義勇警察隊
turn out 外出
ensure 使 確實
cover 遮蔽物
all-clear 解除警報(指空襲)
infrequently 不常
"bamboo wireless" "竹製無線電話" (係指利用竹
器以報告空襲)
through the length and breadth of the land

在全境之內

birdmen 飛行員

synonymous 同樣的

uneasy rumor 使人不安之謠傳

rife 盛的

ascertain 確定

pacify 鎮定

doctrine 主義

mutual help 互助

widen 擴張

community 大眾

neglect 忽略

assistance 援助

agricultural college 農業專門學校

rural service committee 農村服務委員會

farming implements 耕作器具

at regular intervals 按一定時間

mass educational classes 民衆教育班

universal 普遍的

to banish the illiteracy 掃除文盲

take place 舉行

temple 祠堂

monastery 僧院

livestock 家畜
confusion 混亂
shift 遷移
hurriedly 倉卒地
close contact 密切的接觸
neighboring village 鄰村
threaten 有將至之勢
orderly 有秩序的
evacuation 撤退
aimless 無目的的
tragic 悲慘的
stampede 奔竄
precede 在...之前
restraint 約束
impose upon 強迫加之
villager 村民
frame(v.)制定
cover 隱匿
would-be 自稱的
militia 民團
partial 部份的
stoppage 停止
production 生產

product 物產
widespread 廣大的
subjugation 征服

Lesson 7

Franklin Delano Roosevelt

At a time when the world stage was crowded with dictators and "strong men" fiercely competing for the historical limelight, Franklin Delano Roosevelt, product of the normal American Democracy, dwarfed them all. There was probably nobody who enjoyed a deeper or a more widespread respect. As for his predecessors, he so far overshadowed them in the contemporary imagination that when Mr. Kermit Roosevelt, the son of a former President, joined the British Army, English newspapers invariably referred to him as President (Franklin) Roosevelt's cousin and never as President (Theodore) Roosevelt's son. Yet if one had asked any of the President's admirers in the streets of Cleveland or Manchester, of Gothenburg or Budapest, to name any of his achievements, he would probably have been quite unable to do it, because they were

innumerable.

It was his personality that helped him win popularity. When he was inaugurated in the spring of 1933, in the days when every bank in the United States had been forced to close its doors, his countrymen trusted him to save the economic fabric of American society. In the autumn of 1939 there were many all over the world who hoped that he would ultimately save western civilization itself. Perhaps it was because he had one of those magnetic personalities that do inspire confidence.

He is a big, broad-shouldered man with a natural warmth and friendliness which he could somehow infuse into those who met him. His great, beaming smile was, they said, worth a million dollars. He exuded his vitality and his assurance even by the words he chose to express it. He had that hearty assurance that thousands of big business executives used to assume; but in his case it was natural, whereas in theirs it was too often affected.

America has had many presidents who achieved their position from humble beginnings. Too often on their passage from log-cabin to White House

they acquired a strong dislike of log-cabins and the sort of people who live in them.

Roosevelt was an aristocrat. But he fought the people's battles. It used to be said that one day America would have a Noble Family and its name would be Roosevelt. Yet it was Roosevelt who coined the immortal phrase, "The Forgotten Man". So his countrymen did not need any introduction when he stood for President. Franklin was descended on his father's side from New York's original 17th-century Dutch colonists. His mother was of the noble French house of De Lannoy, eminent fighters for the Protestant cause in the religious wars of the fifteenth century.

He went to one of America's few private schools, and then to the Law School at Harvard. He lived in the house that came down to him. In that shifting age he felt himself secure. But this inherited assurance was reinforced by experience. At the age of 40, Roosevelt was attacked by infantile paralysis. There are several stories of how it happened: he caught a chill stamping out a forest fire; he fell overboard while fishing in the

Bay of Lundy; he was seized with cramp while swimming. Anyhow, the paralysis seemed to cut short both career and life. It immobilized from the waist down. His indomitable courage and terrific force of character battled with the thing, checked, and repulsed it. He recovered the use of his limbs, and won back from wheeled-chair to crutches, from crutches to sticks. In the paralysis he drove out of his body men felt a parallel with the paralysis that was creeping over the world. From his victory over the great evil that threatened himself, the President began to feel confident of his ability to defeat the evils that threatened other men.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

stage 舞台

dictator 獨裁者

compete for 競爭

historical limelight 歷史上之盛名

product 產物

democracy 民主政治

dwarf(v.) 使瞠乎其後
as for 至於
predecessor 前任者
so far 如此之甚
overshadow 遮蔽
in the contemporary imagination 在當代人心目中
invariably 不約而同地
admirer 崇拜者
Cleveland 美國一城市之名
Manchester 英國一大都市之名
Gothenburg 瑞典國一城市之名
Budapest 匈牙利京城之名
inaugurate 使就職
trust 付託
economic fabric 經濟機構
ultimately 最後
magnetic 有吸引力的
do inspire confidence 確能引起人之信任
warmth 熱忱
friendliness 友愛
somehow 不知如何地
infuse into 灌輸
beaming 有喜色的

-
- exude 流露
vitality 生氣
assurance 自信
hearty 由衷的
business executive 企業家
affect 假裝
log-cabin 小木屋
White House 白宮(美總統官邸)
coin(v.) 創造
immortal 不朽的
stand for 作…之後補
colonist 移居民
noble French house of De Lannoy 法國 Le
Lannoy 貴族
eminent 著名的
Protestant 基督教新教的
cause 主張;運動
religious wars 歐洲歷史上之宗教鬥爭
private school 私立學校
Law School at Harvard 哈佛大學法學院
come down to 傳之於
in that shifting age 在彼盛衰更迭之時代
feel secure 處之泰然

reinforce 增強
infantile paralysis 幼兒癱瘓症
catch a chill 傷風
stamp out fire 踏滅火
bay 海灣
to be seized with cramp 起痲攣
cut short 突然停止
immobilize 使不能移動
waist 腰部
indomitable 不屈服的
check 阻止
repulse 擊退
wheeled-chair 輪椅
crutch 拐杖
threaten 威脅

Lesson 8

Why the Allies Were Defeated in the Pacific

By P. S. Hsu

It is not wise in war to conceal one's defeat.
Nor is it possible to close our eyes against the

painful truth. Although we shall never assume a defeatist's attitude towards our Anti-Fascist Campaign, yet, with a view to learning some valuable lessons from frustration, we need to expose the outcome of the Battle of the Pacific, however unfavorable it may seem.

Since the commencement of hostilities on the seventh of last December, the Allies have been in a very difficult situation. Apart from considerable casualties suffered and great damage done to warships, airplanes, and other munitions in general, Britain lost the entire Malay Peninsula, and the greater part of Burma; America, the Philippine Islands; and Holland, the entirety of the East Indies. Still more serious is that, up to the present moment, the Allies have been forced back point after point with no effective resistance.

People would be sorely perplexed as to the reason why the Allies, made up of two first-rate Powers and several other countries, could not knock down a single opponent but, on the contrary, were routed by him. What was wrong with the Allies? How could Japan gain victory after victory? These

two questions have led us to make an attempt to study the causes why Mars did not favor the seemingly stronger side.

As matters stand, the Allies, though composed of the forces of Great Britain, the United States, Australia, the Netherlands, and, later on, China, are completely under the leadership of the two first-named Powers. Therefore, these have to take the responsibility for the defeat.

Let us, first of all, recollect the diplomatic policy which the Democracies followed until the outbreak of the war in the Pacific. Nothing will seem more strange to the future historian than the fact that the British and the American governments failed to anticipate the course which Japan was to pursue. Even when Japan's ambition of dominating the whole Pacific had manifestly proved by her grabbing Far Eastern strategic zones and devastating the Democracies' interests, both political and economic, the British and the American governments did not take any preventive measure against her. Not only did they fail to nip aggression in the bud, but they eschewed all actions calculated

to give umbrage to Japan. It was Britain who, at the cost of China, closed the Burma-Yunnan Highway to appease Japan. It was America who connived at profiteers selling Japan scrap steel, aviation gasoline, and many other war materials. With these supplies, Japan enriched her ammunition reserve and strengthened herself so much as to be able to give the Democracies a serious blow. This is surely a remote cause.

Secondly, the absence of preparation for action on the part of the British and American forces-is, no doubt, an important factor which contribute to the Allies' defeat in the Pacific. We might remember very clearly that this war began with Japan's air raid on Pearl Harbor. It is believed that America lost two thousand planes and scores of ships. This may be an exaggerated estimate but that the invaders' blitzkrieg was actually a successful one is not to be denied. In the course of the next three days, two first-class British battleships, the Prince of Wales and the Repulse were totally destroyed by Japanese bombs. More regrettably, every military base in the Pacific was

garrisoned only with few troops. All these serve to elucidate the proposition that the Democracies made little preparation on the eve of the war.

The third cause, probably the most underlying one, lies in the fact that the Allies fell far short of air force which plays an extremely important part in modern warfares. From the very beginning of this war, Japan, with Germany's plentiful supply, has been withholding the Allies in the air, as a result of which she could unscrupulously take any place she wanted. Not to speak of Hongkong and Manila, Singapore, which had generally been regarded as an impregnable military base, was captured within a week. Why? The answer is simple: lack of air force. The fall of Malay Peninsula and the Dutch East Indies into the enemy's hands is, of course, due to the same reason. The British and the Indian soldiers did offer heroic resistance; however, they could not stop the advance of the aggressor. Even the valiant Chinese warriors could not act on an effective offensive because of a scarcity of prevailing air force.

In the fourth place, the mistaken strategy of

the Allies leads to their being defeated. During the last three months, the main interest of both President Roosevelt and Prime Minister Churchill centered on the European battle-ground; and the Pacific was, thereby, looked upon as a war area of minor importance. This can be easily traced through Roosevelt's speeches and the debates in the English Commons. Now the American statesmen and generals seem to have given up their long-cherished prejudice; but their reinforcements, covering all sorts of forces and munitions, are sent merely to Australia, that is to say, the battlefields in Burma and China are still being neglected. Furthermore, the Allies, except the Chinese armies, used to assume the defensive and thus caused the morale to wilt by degrees. Being passive in fighting, they would naturally lose the day.

Lastly, the tardy and difficult transportation proved a curse to the Allies. Since Japan occupied Guam Island, Midway Island, and Wake Island, American ships have been compelled to take the farthest navigation route to the Far East; and in the meantime, they must endeavor to escape from

Japan's bombers and submarines. AS transportation is thus inevitably delayed, the defending troops in various places are liable to be isolated and beaten.

In brief, the Allies' defeat is caused, first, by the Democracies' previous mistaken policy; secondly, by their poor preparation for war; thirdly, by insufficiency of air force; fourthly, by error of strategy; and fifthly, by dilatory transportation. Hence, to make up all these defects is a matter too urgent to be delayed any longer. And, if the Allies intend to bring the war to a triumphant conclusion, nothing short of an immediate, wide-spread offensive will do any good.

VOCABULARY

- Allies 同盟國
Pacific: Pacific Ocean 太平洋
defeatist 戰敗論者
casualty (軍事上之)死傷損失
Malay Peninsula 馬來半島
Burma 緬甸
Philippine Islands 菲律賓羣島
Holland 荷蘭
East Indies 東印度羣島

-
- perplex 使迷惑
first-rate Power 頭等強國
Mars 戰神
seemingly stronger 似乎較強的
as matters stand 就目前之情形而論
Australia 澳大利亞
the Netherlands 低地國, 即荷蘭
under the leadership of 在……領導之下
diplomatic policy 外交政策
grab 非法佔領
nip ……in the bud 防範……於未然
eschew 避免
give umbrage to 觸怒
at the cost of 以犧牲……
Burma-Yunnan Highway 滇緬公路
appease 緩和
reserve 貯藏
remote cause 遠因
Pearl Harbor 珍珠港(屬夏威夷羣島)
exaggerated 言過其實的
blitzkrieg (German) 閃電戰
Prince of Wales 威爾斯親王號(軍艦名)
Repulse 抗拒號(軍艦名)

garrison 駐防
elucidate 說明
underlying 基本的
unscrupulously 無所顧忌地
Hongkong 香港
Singapore 新加坡
impregnable 難攻陷的
scarcity 缺乏
English Commons 英國衆議院
lose the day 敗北
tardy 緩慢的
Guam Island 關島
Midway Island 中途島
Wake Island 威克島
navigation route 航路
bomber 轟炸機
submarine 潛水艇
nothing short of 捨……之外
widespread 廣大的

Lesson 9

Profiteers-Enemies of Salaried Men

Recently a renowned playwright made a wise

crack. He said: "Nowadays everything is expensive but public functionaries." Another witty writer said that he had gone through a comprehensive list of daily articles and found that prices on them had all gone up. However, he consoled himself, one still paid five cents to post a letter, same as before the war.

But now even postage gone up sixty percent, from five cents to eight, whereas salaried men are still keeping their respective salary scales if they are lucky. If not, they may actually earn less than before as the result of reductions.

The point is that to salaried men their dollar cannot buy things as much as before. In fact the earnings of some of them are not enough to keep their bodies and souls together. If they cannot even have enough to eat, naturally they would not work efficiently at their offices. Something must be done about it for the sake of efficiency if not for the sake of their health.

In wartime, it must be admitted, increased prices on commodities form a natural phenomenon. But the skyrocketing of commodity prices in

Chungking came so sudden that it was anything but natural. Before the first Japanese attack on Chungking in April things could be obtained at fair prices. After the first bombing prices went up in a big jump. From then on each bombing brought the prices further up until the present ridiculously high level.

Theoretically air raids may have a direct bearing on the increase of prices because, in the first place, they would cause a shortage of goods due to the temporary cutting off of supplies. For instance, farmers would rather keep their products for a certain length of time than going to town to risk their lives. It is one of the fundamental principles in economics that prices on commodities would go up if and when the supply cannot meet the demand adequately. But this principle does not fit in perfectly in the case of Chungking. When fresh supplies of commodities stop coming in during the bombing season, large numbers of local residents voluntarily evacuate the wartime capital. With a certain reduction of the local population, the demand is correspondingly decreased. Through the investi-

gations conducted by the Social Welfare Bureau and other government offices showed that there were enough supplies of house coal when fuel prices skyrocketed like the rest of daily necessities. Such investigations conclusively proved that, at least partially, the upward trend of the commodity price index is due to artificial manipulations—profiteering.

As things stand, the salaried class is the most hard hit because their income is more or less fixed. One of the simplest ways to combat the situation is to give them substantial raises. But the best way which can be used either as a substitute for salary increase or as a complementary measure is to make widespread the cooperative movement. Cooperative stores have proved that they not only can supply their members with daily necessities at lower prices but also form a sufficiently strong force to battle profiteering.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

profiteer 獲取不正當利益者

salaried men 薪水階級之人

-
- renowned 著名的
playwright 劇作家
make a wise crack 作雋妙之諧語
public functionary 公務員
console 安慰
postage 郵費
sixty percent 百分之六十
scale 等級
point 要點
keep body and soul together 保存生命
efficiently 有效地
for the sake of 爲...起見
commodity 商品
a natural phenomenon 自然之現象
skyrocket 流星火花(此處用以喻物價高漲之速)
anything but 決非
ridiculously high level 高到可笑的程度
theoretically 就理論上言之
bearing 關係
in the first place 第一
shortage 缺乏
temporary 暫時的
cutting off 斷絕

- risk their lives 冒生命之險
supply 供給
demand 需要
adequately 充分地
local resident 當地居民
voluntarily 自願地
evacuate the wartime capital 退出戰時首都
correspondingly 相當地
decrease 減少
Social Welfare Bureau 社會局
house coal 家用煤
fuel 燃料
daily necessity 日用必需品
partially 部份地
upward '向上'的
trend 趨勢
price index 物價指數
artificial 人爲的
manipulation 操縱
as things stand 按目前情形而論
most hard hit 最受打擊者
income 收入
more or less 或多或少

a complementary measure 補充之方法
cooperative movement 合作運動

Lesson 10

From Paddyfield to Battlefield

In a small village near the city of Wukang in southwestern Hunan lives the Foong family. Father Foong is a farmer, and with his ten-acre paddyfield he has been able to keep his family of five fairly contented. For centuries Foong have lived and died in this same place. To people such as these, who live hundreds of miles from the seaboard, the outside world usually means little or nothing. But the invasion of Japan into China shook the very foundation of their simple life. . .

The war had not been three months old when the eldest son of the family was drafted to the colours. One chilly November morning, the village elder called a mass meeting, and announced that the village had been ordered to send 25 men to fight in the war. All the able-bodied young men between 20 and 30 were required to come forward to draw lots for services. . .

As a result of the drawing, Foong Ah-dah was chosen. This was a great shock to the family. The mother, who had been planning to get her son married the following year so that she might in the near future have a grandson to fondle, could not get reconciled to the ideal that her first born was to go to war. For days she was in tears. The family also could ill afford to spare Ah-dah on the farm. So for days the air hung very heavy over his family or five honest and hardworking souls—father, mother, two sons and a daughter.

On the fifth morning, when the family was having their congee with salted eggs and cabbage, the 16-year-old second brother Ah-er, gave his parents another violent shock by proposing to go in place of his brother. In China, where a great many boys in their early teens have joined the army and given good accounts of themselves, this proposal did not sound so impossible.

The hitch was that, while the elder son was quite indispensable to the family, the younger one was the mother's darling; and she minced no words in condemning the proposition. But Ah-er, who

had heard a thing or two from wounded soldiers who returned from the front about horrible ways in which the Japanese conducted their warfare in China and whose young blood was boiling over some of the accounts, could not be persuaded to give up his intention of going to war. As he could not obtain permission from the family, he ran away to a recruiting office in the neighbouring district two days after his brother had left.

The elder brother fought first in the northern war zone and was later transferred to the Yangtze Valley defence. The battalion to which the younger brother was attached had all the time been stationed in the Hankow area. Late in August, it was ordered to reinforce the forces fighting at Mahuiling, south of Kiukiang.

At dawn one September morning, the Chinese attacked the Japanese trenches. Hand-to-hand fighting developed on a plateau among the hills, with the Japanese retreating slowly.

While Ah-er was advancing with his battalion, he saw a Chinese soldier, who was chasing a Japanese, stumble and fall down. The Japanese

swung around and prepared to plunge his bayonet into the Chinese.

Quicker than thought, Ah-er put a bullet through the Japanese. Even at a couple of hundred yards, he could recognize his brother's big square head and huge frame not so common among the southerners. Despite the heavy fighting going on around them, the two brothers had a joyous reunion. For days and days, the main topic of conversation in the two battalions was the miraculous feat of Ah-er in saving his brother's life.

HELPS TO STUDY

This story is based on true facts. It is selected from a pamphlet published by China's International Publicity Bureau.

VOCABULARY

paddyfield 稻田

Wukang 武岡(縣名)

Hunan 湖南

acre 畝(英)

contented 滿意的

for centuries 歷數百年
family of five 五口之家
seaboard 海岸
shook(present:shake) 搖動
to be drafted to the colours 被選入伍
chilly 寒冷的
village elder 村長
call a mass meeting 召集一民衆大會
announce 宣佈
able-bodied 體格健壯的
to draw lots 抽籤
as a result of 由於...之結果
Ah-dah 阿大(人名)
shock 震驚
in the near future 在最近之將來
grandson 孫子
fondle 撫愛
could not get reconciled with the ideal 不能符
合其理想
can ill afford 不能
spare 捨棄
The air hung very heavy 空氣很緊張
soul 人

congee 粥

salted egg 鹽蛋

cabbage 白菜

Ah-er 阿二(人名)

violent 劇烈的

propose 提議

teens 十三至十九之年歲

give good accounts of one's self 有優異之表現

sound (v.) 似乎

hitch 障礙

indispensable 必不可少的

mince no words 吞吐而不能說出

condemn the proposition 斷定此條陳不當

horrible 可怕的

conduct warfare 作戰

intention 意向

a recruiting office 招募軍隊之機關

war zone 戰區

transfer 調遷

Yangtze Valley 揚子江流域

defence 防線

battalion 營

attach 附屬

-
- all the time 始終
station(v.) 駐紮
Mahuling 馬迴嶺(地名)
Kiukiang 九江
trench 戰壕
hand-to-hand fighting 短兵相接
plateau 高原
retreat 退却
chase 追逐
stumble 顛蹶
swung(present:swing)around 迴轉
plunge 投
bayonet 槍刺
quicker than thought 說時遲, 那時快
bullet 槍彈
a couple of hundred yards 兩百碼
recognize 認識
big square head 大而方的頭部
frame 身體
southerner 南方人
have a reunion 重聚
for days and days 許多天
topic 談資

miraculous 不可思議的

Lesson 11

Their Days Are Numbered

(From "Hankow Herald")

Just three years ago people in the wartime capital used to be moved by the posturing Wang Ching-wei who proclaimed to the world that he would do his best to help elevate China to a status of equality among nations; but to-day this same Wang Ching-wei has brought upon himself the inevitable title of number one puppet. Everybody knows that Wang Ching-wei and his gang inaugurated their puppet show on March 30, 1940. Whatever pretexts they might still proffer, none can explain away their notorious crime of betraying the nation. Facts have proved that they are permanently regarded by the world as puppets and traitors. As traitors they naturally have no spiritual life to speak of. As puppets they will not have any real political life though they may hold high positions in a bogus government. Their physical life, too,

will not last long—and this is what we mean when we say that their days are numbered.

When it is sometimes said that a certain person is following a suicidal course, it is a figurative expression meaning that he is doing something extremely detrimental to his own interests rather than that he is actually going to take his own life, although in some cases it might lead to that result. In the case of Wang Ching-wei and his henchmen, however it is literally true. At the present moment—outwardly at least—they appear to be in high spirits. They seem to be happy not because they are going to witness the consummation of their “peace” movement (which is absolutely impossible under the present circumstances) but because they think they are going to realize their selfish desires, for which their talk of “peace” is merely a camouflage. What they want is money and power: the former is what most of the puppets seek after, while the latter is undoubtedly Wang Ching-wei’s chief object as he has always been known as a fairly wealthy man owing to the rich dowry brought by his wife. The question, however, is: Will

Wang Ching-wei be able to enjoy much power? Will the puppets realize their dream of getting rich quick? In our opinion, it is very unlikely in both cases. Being puppets they cannot hope to enjoy much real power since everything will be under the strict control of their Japanese masters. And money, too, will be grabbed by the Japanese themselves, who will leave only some crumbs to feed their despised running-dogs. So in the end, it is quite likely that Wang Ching-wei and his henchmen, being utterly disappointed, will end it all by committing suicide.

If Wang Ching-wei and the other puppets are going to bring their traitorous career to an end by committing suicide, we shall consider them as very lucky indeed. The chances are, however, that they will not be able to end their ignominious lives in this manner. There are many ways in which earthly existence may be terminated long before they think of committing suicide. First, their service may be so unsatisfactory as to make Japanese masters decide to put them to death. Second, mutual jealousy and conflict of interests may cause

them to murder each other. Third, Chinese patriots may kill them if opportunities offer. Fourth, Chinese troops may capture them by staging surprise attacks. Fifth, if they succeed in escaping to Japan or other foreign countries after the invaders are defeated and driven out, Chinese patriots will still have a chance to assassinate them. Wherever they may go, death will await them in every corner. Finally we repeat again that their days are numbered.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

Their days are numbered 彼等之末日將屆
 wartime capital 戰時首都
 move 感動
 posturing 矯揉作態的
 proclaim 宣布
 elevate China to a status of equality 躋中國於平等之地位
 inevitable 不可避免的
 title 頭銜
 number one puppet 第一名傀儡

- gang 奸黨
puppet show 傀儡戲
pretext 託辭;藉口
proffer 提出
notorious 劣績昭彰
betray the nation 賣國
permanently 永遠地
traitor 叛賊
naturally 當然
spiritual 精神的
hold high position 據高位
a bogus government 偽政府
last 持續
to follow a suicidal course 走自殺之路
a figurative expression 詞藻
extremely 極端地
detrimental to one's own interests 違害其自身之
利益
to take one's own life 自戕其生命
in some cases 就某些情形而論
lead to 引起
henchmen 親信
literally true 絲毫不爽 千真萬確;

-
- at the present moment 現在
outwardly 表面
in high spirits 高興
witness 目擊
under the present circumstances 在目前之環境下
realize 遂
camouflage 掩蔽真相
seek after 營求
a fairly wealthy man 尙富之人
owing to 由於
dowry 嫁資
unlikely 未必成功
under the strict control of 在 嚴格控制之下
grab 攫奪
crumb 少許
running-dog 走狗
in the end 結果
bring traitorous career to an end 結束其漢奸之
生涯
commit suicide 自殺
being utterly disappointed 完全失望
ignominious 可恥的
earthly existence 形體之存在

terminate 終止
unsatisfactory 不能滿意
so as to 以致
put one to death 處死
mutual jealousy 互相的妒嫉
conflict of interests 利益之衝突
murder 暗殺
if opportunities offer 倘有機會
staging surprise attack 突襲
assassinate 行刺

Lesson 12

Whither America

By Wendell L. Willkie

That is the first point we must remember: that we in America affect greatly all the rest of the world. The second point is just the reverse: what happens in the rest of the world must inevitably have profound effects on us in America. Suppose Germany wins this war. All of Europe will then come under a totalitarian system of government. All the hundreds of millions of

people in Europe will become slaves to dictators. And if that happens, Hitler will also control Africa. From Africa, with hundreds of commercial airplanes, he will reach out to South America, where in fact he has already begun fifth-column activities similar to those that wrecked Holland, Norway and France. At the same time, if Germany wins this war, Japan will strike southward to the East Indies and take possession of many resources upon which the democratic world is dependent.

Thus, if Germany wins, the United States will find itself almost surrounded by governments hostile to our form of government, to our methods of earning a living and to our conception of world trade. And when we find ourselves alone in that situation, we shall have two choices—both equally fatal.

We may choose to trade with those hostile governments. If we make this choice, however, we shall have to trade on their terms—we shall have to adopt totalitarian methods of trade. Our government will find it necessary to make deals

with those governments. It will therefore have to tell us what we can buy or sell abroad, how much, and at what price. This can end in only one way: total control of our markets, our manufacturing, our prices and our labor. We ourselves shall be driven to totalitarianism.

Instead of that, we might make the second choice—we might decide not to trade with any other nation. We might try to live within ourselves. But this also would be fatal. During the last ten years of economic distress at home and abroad our foreign markets have been so small that we have had to subsist by deficit financing; we have had to pile up huge government debts in order to sustain the present of living of our people. The end of that road is obvious: inflation, bankruptcy, and chaos. But if we had no foreign markets whatever, the need for deficit financing would be much greater. Unemployment would be much greater. Our scale of living would contract. Free enterprises would be destroyed by unrest and by fear. The government would have to step in to run our industries, our enterprises, our jobs and

finally our lives. We would lose our freedom in the very process of trying to save it.

Those, I truly believe, are the two alternatives if Germany wins this war. But there is still a third factor to consider: I am satisfied that if we were virtually surrounded by a world whose principles were hostile to ours we would be plunged into war. We Americans would not and could not afford to tolerate the depredations of bold and unscrupulous aggressors, carrying out their enslavement of free peoples right here in our own hemisphere—in the Argentine, in Brazil in central America, possibly even in Mexico. We would have to fight.

And by that time we should be fighting alone. Britain, our best ally, would be gone. We should have to face aggressors on the Pacific and on the Atlantic. In order to do this we should have to keep on almost indefinitely building and maintaining stupendous armaments. Our debt would rise to proportions which have not yet been dreamed of. And under that debt our democratic system would inevitably collapse.

Those are the three chief reasons for adopting an international point of view—first, because America has a profound effect on the rest of the world; second, because the rest of the world has an equally profound effect on America, so that if Germany wins we shall lose our lives as free men either by outside threat or inner necessity; and third, if Germany wins, we shall almost surely find ourselves fighting after all and, by that time, fighting alone.

HELPS TO STUDY

Wilkie is the leader of America's Republican Party, who competed with Roosevelt in the latest presidential election.

VOCABULARY

affect 影響

just the reverse 適得其反

profound 強烈的

totalitarian system of government 極權之政制

Hitler 希特勒(德元首)

reach out to South America 伸展至南美洲

fifth column activities 第五縱隊之活動

-
- wreck 破滅
Holland 荷蘭國
Norway 挪威國
East Indies 東印度(荷屬)
take possession of 佔有
resources 資源
hostile 敵對的
conception 觀念
fatal 致命的
to trade on their terms 依彼等之條件貿易
make deals 往來(指通商)
market 市場
manufacturing 製造(指工業)
totalitarianism 極權主義
economic distress at home and abroad 國內外之
經濟困難
subsist by deficit financing 在財政不敷情況下生
活
inflation 通貨膨脹
bankruptcy 破產
chaos 紛亂
pile up huge government debts 使政府債臺高築
sustain 支持

-
- unemployment 失業
our scale of living would contract 我們的生活標準會降低
unrest 不安定
step in 干預
run our industries 管理我們的實業
enterprise 企業；事業
job 職業；工作
alternative 二者之一(非此即彼之方式)
virtually 實際上
plunge into war 投入戰爭
tolerate 忍受
depredation 掠奪
enslavement 使為奴隸
free peoples 自由之民族
right here 即在此處
in our own hemisphere 指在西半球
the Argentine = the Argentine Republic 阿根廷共和國(美洲)
Brazil 巴西(南美共和國)
Mexico 墨西哥(北美共和國)
fight alone 單獨作戰
ally 盟國

would be gone 已不存在矣
 the Pacific 太平洋
 the Atlantic 大西洋
 keep on 繼續
 building and maintaining stupendous armaments 建造與維持龐大之軍備
 proportion 比率
 democratic system 民主制度
 collapse 瓦解
 point of view 觀點；見解

Lesson 13

Mulan

By H. Y. Yang

Whirring and humming; humming and whirring,
 The maid weaves by the door.
 The loom stops humming, the loom stops whirring,
 One hears her sighing sore.

"Of whom you're thinking," my pretty maid,
 "And who is on your mind?"
 "Of no one I'm thinking," replies the maid,

"And no one's on my mind."

"Last night I saw the army's roll;
"The Great Khan's waging war.
"My father's name's in every roll;
"There were twelve rolls and more."

"My father has no son in need;
"No elder brother I.
"I'll get the saddle and the steed,
"And for my father die."

At East Fair she secures the steed,
At West the saddle's bought,
At South the reins which she does need,
Northward the whip is sought.

At dawn she leaves her parents dear,
At eve she rests beside
The Yellow River, can hear
Only the ebbing tide,

At dawn she leaves the dusky stream,

At eve she rests before
The dark hills, and hears in her dream
The enemy's wild uproar.

She rides a myriad miles wellnigh
The hills all flying past.
In ten years' fighting many die
But she returns at last.

The Emperor she goes to see
Within his palace grand.
The Great Khan shows her courtesy,
And grants her gifts and land.

The Great Khan asks, "What do you need?"
"I would not here remain,
"But give me a swift-prancing steed,
"And send me home again.

Her parents hear the maid has come;
They hasten out before;
Her sister hears that she has come,
And greets her by the door.

The younger brother hears it too;
A great feast he does spread.
The chamber door she passes through,
And sits upon the bed.

Then she takes off her garb of war,
In dress of old days dight;
And she adorns her hair once more
Before the mirror bright.

Her comrades old she goes to greet,
And they are all dismayed
At her whom long since they did meet,
But knew not 'twas a maid.

For when some male hares are found,
Beside a female hare,
All running nimbly on the ground;
Who can tell she is there?

HELPS TO STUDY

This is a translation of the well-known ancient Chinese ballad, “木蘭詞”. It is advisable to study the original first.

VOCABULARY

Mulan 木蘭

whirring 急動時之呼呼聲

humming 作營營聲

maid 少女

weave 織

loom 織機

sigh 嘆息

sore 悲痛的 Siberia how to wait for

you're = you are

I'm = I am

one's = one is

army's roll 軍隊之名冊

Khan 可汗

name's = name is

saddle 鞍

steed 駿馬

East Fair 東市

West = West Fair
 rein 韁(常用複數)
 whip 鞭
 eve 黃昏;夕
 Yellow River 黃河
 ebbing tide 落潮
 dusky 微黑的
 uproar 喧器
 myriad 一萬
 wellnigh 幾乎
 show courtesy to 表懇懇之意
 swift-prancing 善馳的
 greet 歡迎
 spread, ~~in~~ ⁱⁿ ~~long~~ since they did
 chamber 臥室
 garb 服裝
 dight 穿
 adorn 修飾
 dismay 使驚愕
 hare 野兔
 nimbly 敏捷地

Lesson 14

Stalin Talks to Rosita Forbes

(From "Answers")

"Never, in any circumstances," Stalin once remarked to me, "will the Soviet Republic make a European war of aggression."

"I am not interested in Russia, only in the world," he continued, slowly and with emphasis, "I am working for the People, not for Russia."

Always, it seemed to me, this slow-talking, deliberate, patient man learned during years of imprisonment in Siberia how to wait for what he wanted.

Sitting at his desk in the Kremlin, and speaking only Russian, he had to use an interpreter.

I asked Stalin how he could justify so many deaths, and he replied:

"Our losses are small when you consider that we are engaged on a work, some day, will benefit the whole of humanity."

Here is this stalwart, Georgian peasant's philo-

sophy. Neither his own life nor other people's lives count with him, for he looks far ahead beyond this generation and the next. As his own farming folk and the shepherds by whom he was surrounded in earlier years think always a harvest ahead, so Stalin plans for the future. Whenever I returned to Russia—three years ago, a year and a half ago—I found him unchanged. He might never have moved from the desk at which I had first seen him, or the unvarnished table at which we used to lunch with his former wife, a factory worker, who is now dead.

He rarely showed interest, but he answered carefully when I spoke to him of men and oil and war. He said:

“We must be self-supporting. We must have food, cotton, oil and minerals. These are more important even than men. Yes, I am oil-minded. Oil is vital to us because we are so big. It means transport. It means speed. We can only conquer the distances which are inimical to us with oil.”

Stalin's one amusing remark to me followed his reiteration of: “Never, neyer, in any circumstances,

will the Soviet make a war of aggression." Unsmiling, he underlined his policy. "Between the Siberian steppes and the hot valleys of the Caucasus, we can grow everything except cocoa. Do you really think that any intelligent nation would go to war to change the national drink from tea to cocoa?"

"But we must be secure," Stalin emphasized, "We must bar our windows on the East and the West."

This could only mean fortifying the Siberian frontier against Japan, and the entrance to the Gulf of Finland against attack from the west. It is attack which the Soviet Government fears: Stalin, like every other Bolshevik I have met, has this strange, deep terror of invasion.

He has always visualized capitalist countries uniting for the destruction of Russia. Chief among them he, like most of his colleagues, feared Germany. In view of this, and of Stalin's honest determination that the Soviet Union shall be safe—that is the first thing he thinks of in the Baltic—it is inconceivable that he should deliberately streng-

then Germany until, as victors in a European war, the Nazis would be in a position to attack Russia.

Stalin has always believed that this war would come. Once I asked him if he thought Germany would win it. He replied:

“No country will win the next war, and only Russia will profit by it.”

I do not think Stalin thinks in terms of military conquest. He used to say:

“I want the workers to have enough—just that.”

Working on so vast a scale for the future would arise a “new humanity; equal in labor and reward,” he didn’t really care about persons.

Whenever I met him, it seemed that he had to make an effort to remember me.

Once, Stalin talked of his six imprisonments, of the Church, for which, until the age of sixteen, he had been educated by devout parents, saying that it was “a drug for the exhausted and hopeless.” I asked him what he liked best in life.

He considered the matter, and said:

“Dogs, children, my own people, the workers

in Georgia among whom I was raised.”

“And what do you dislike most?”

The answer was surprising and was accompanied by a smile.

With a kettle in her hand; the young woman translated, laughing:

“He says, ‘Large, mountainous females, full of words.’”

HELPS TO STUDY

The foregoing is an account of Stalin's interview with Rosita Forbes, a female journalist.

VOCABULARY

in any circumstances 處於任何情形之下

remark (v.) 說

the Soviet Republic 蘇維埃共和國

with emphasis 鄭重

it seems to me 以余觀之

slow-talking 說話遲緩的

deliberate 審慎的

imprisonment 監禁

Siberia 西伯利亞

Kremlin 莫斯科皇城(爲俄政府所在地)

- justify 證為正當
 to be engaged on 從事
 some day 他日
 the whole of humanity 全人類
 stalwart 強壯的
 Georgian 喬治亞(蘇俄聯邦之一)地方的
 philosophy 哲學
 Neither his own life nor other people's lives
 count with him 彼自己之生命與他人之生命均不
 重視
 shepherd 牧羊者
 unvarnished 未漆的
 lunch 進點心
 self-supporting 自給的
 mineral 礦物
 oil-minded 注意“油”的
 vital 重要的
 transport 運輸
 speed 迅速
 inimical 有礙的
 one amusing remark 一句有趣的話
 reiteration 重述
 underline 表明

-
- steppe 大草原
valleys of Caucasus 高加索山谷
cocoa 可可(茶)
secure 安全的
bar 門住
fortify 增強
frontier 邊疆
entrance 入口
the Gulf of Finland 芬蘭海灣
visualize 揣想
colleague 同僚
in view of 因
Soviet Union 蘇維埃聯邦
Baltic 波羅的(海)
inconceivable 令人難信的
in terms of 用…言詞
on so vast a scale 如此大規模
labor 勞動
reward 酬報
devout 虔誠的
“a drug for the exhausted and hopeless” 疲勞
者與失望者之麻醉藥
my own people 我之親屬

surprising 令人驚異的

mountainous 似山的

female 女人

full of words 喋喋的

Lesson 15

China's War-Time Movies

(From "China at War")

War left Shanghai a city minus its fame as China's Hollywood when Chinese artists of the silver screen marched inland en masse after the withdrawal of the Chinese troops from their Shanghai fronts.

The march ended at the war-time capital, Chungking and more than 500 of these artists are now busy turning out China's war-time movies. Others continued on, branching out to various parts of the country as roving bands of actors and actresses to give stage performances of China's war-time plays.

The choicest group of 500 stars are working under the Motion Picture Bureau of the National

Military Council of China. The bureau was mainly the outgrowth of the Central Motion Picture Studio which formerly had its plant by the side of the beautiful Lotus Lake in Nanking.

The 500 movie actors and actresses include many who played pillar roles in several pictures that have won applause not only in China but also abroad. "The Fisherman's Song," for instance, after a run lasting more than a month before full-house audiences in one theatre in Shanghai, was taken to Moscow in 1935 and there it ranked high with productions of other countries participating in the international exposition held at the Russian Capital. Equally acclaimed was another Chinese picture entitled, "Two Sisters."

"Two Sisters" starred China's idol of the screen, Miss Butterfly Wu, who attended the Moscow Exposition of 1935 in company with Dr. Mei Lan-fang, foremost female impersonator on the stage in China. She has since been married and now remains in Hongkong expecting a child. She is the only loss to China's war-time movie industry.

The rank and file of the army of China's

Hollywood have fought many wars on the silver screen—war against the warlords, war against corrupt officials and evil gentry and war against heavy taxation and other evils of the old regime.

But never have they appeared in any picture that might have been dubbed as a screen war against Japan. Any picture portraying the patriotism of the Chinese as being stimulated by the aggressive acts of a neighboring country would have been drastically cut or banned entirely by the Movie Censorship Board of the Shanghai Municipal Council in Shanghai which has Japanese members.

Under the banner of the Motion Picture Bureau of the National Military Council, the Chinese movie actors and actresses from Shanghai may, for the first time, taste the forbidden fruit to their hearts' content. In the pictures now being produced by the bureau, not only will they shout anti-Japanese slogans but also fight and kill the Niponese aggressors in mock engagements.

In producing pictures portraying the different aspects of China's campaign of resisting Japanese

aggression, the Motion Picture Bureau has also under its disposal the troupe of men and women that belonged to the Central Motion picture Studio formerly affiliated with the Central Party Headquarters in Nanking. In addition, temporary actors and actresses can be recruited from time to time.

Following the old adage that seeing is believing, they are mobilizing their talents for screen propaganda work under the Chinese Movie Industry Anti Japanese Association.

Through the eyes of the camera, the Association is giving the Chinese public epic war films as "Defending Our Territory," and the "Doomed Battalion," acted and directed by some of the nation's greatest screen names. While in actual war zones daredevil Chinese photographers—a few of whom have already made their supreme sacrifices—have turned out many newsreels truthfully depicting Japanese atrocities and Chinese bravery.

As in foreign countries, outstanding actors and actresses in China become the idols of millions. So China is finding the new device of awakening

her masses through the appeals of her screen stars particularly effective. Not only are the pictures starring these outstanding players in great favor but picture-goers are also intensely interested in snapshots hazardously taken from the firing lines. The audiences are so aroused by film scenes that sporadic outbursts of emotion punctuate all films depicting the war.

Taking advantage of the united strength now as its command, with its headquarters in Chungking, is planning to release one new picture every month besides numerous newsreels. All these films will have a bearing on the present war.

The Association contemplates shipping some of the most representative pictures abroad so that millions of overseas Chinese and sympathetic foreign friends may have a better understanding of China's heroic resistance against Japan.

The Association, whose military guidance is unprecedented in the history of the Chinese movie industry, may prove to be one of the nation's most powerful weapons in swaying the masses to the heights of patriotism in China's crisis.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

- minus its fame as China's Hollywood 被奪去
“中國好萊塢”之名
- silver screen 銀幕
- inland 內地
- en masse 全體
- withdrawal 撤退
- front 前線
- Chungking 重慶
- turn out 製造
- branch out 分佈
- roving 遊歷的
- band 羣；隊
- to give stage performances of China's war-time
plays 作中國戰時戲劇之舞台表演
- choicest 最優的
- star “明星”
- Motion Picture Bureau 電影部
- National Military Council of China 中國軍事委
員會
- outgrowth 成長之結果

Central Motion Picture Studio 中央電影製片廠

(照原名)

plant 工廠

pillar role 主要的角色

win applause 博得稱揚

abroad 在國外

The Fisherman's Song “漁光曲”(原名)

a run lasting more than a month 連演月餘

full-house 滿座

audience 觀客

theatre(or: theater) 戲院

Moscow 莫斯科

rank high 列高等

production 作品

participate 參加

exposition 展覽會

acclaim 稱讚

entitled 名爲

Two Sisters “姊妹花”(原名)

star(verb) 使顯著

idol 偶像

Miss Butterfly Wu 胡蝶小姐

Mei Lan-fang 梅蘭芳

-
- foremost 指最優而言
female impersonator 女角扮演者
rank and file 全體兵士
warlord 軍閥
corrupt official 腐敗之官吏
evil gentry 邪惡之紳士
heavy taxation 重稅
dub 與以稱號
portray 描寫
drastically 激烈地
ban 禁止
Movie Censorship Board 電影檢查部
Shanghai Municipal Council 上海市工部局
banner 旗幟
to their hearts' content 完全滿意
slogan 口號
mock 假的
aspect 方面
disposal 處置
troupe 一羣
affiliated with 屬於
Central Party Headquarters 中央黨部
temporary 臨時的

-
- recruit (v.) 招募
from time to time 時時
adage 諺語
seeing is believing 見而後信；百聞不如一見
mobilize 動員
talent 才能
propaganda 宣傳
Chinese Movie Industry Anti Japanese Association 中國電影業抗日協會
camera 攝影機
epic 詠史詩的
film 影片
Doomed Battalion 八百壯士（原名，照字義應譯為“無救之孤軍”）
greatest screen names 最卓越的銀幕人物
daredevil 勇敢的
photographer 攝影師
made their supreme sacrifices 作壯烈之犧牲
newsreel 新聞片
atrocities 暴行
outstanding 特出的
device 策略
awaken her masses 喚醒其民衆

- appeal 愛好
picture-goer 電影觀眾
intensely interested 深切地感覺興趣
snapshot 快攝之影片
hazardously taken from the firing lines 從火線
上冒險攝來
scene 情景
sporadic 特發的
outbursts of emotion 情感之激動
punctuate (以感嘆之呼聲)打斷
take advantage of 利用
release one new picture every month 每月開演
一新影片
bearing 關係
contemplate 計畫
ship 輸出 (v.)
representative 代表的
overseas Chinese 海外華僑
unprecedented 空前的
weapon 武器
sway the masses to the heights of patriotism 激
動民衆使提高其愛國心
crisis 危急存亡之際

Lesson 16

Portrait of a Patriot

(From "China at War")

Believe it or not, the moving spirit of the 20,000 Chinese guerrillas who have been giving Japanese troops along the northern section of the Peiping-Hankow Railway endless troubles, is a 57-year-old peasant woman, silvery-haired but sturdy as a oak, who can shoot two Mauser pistols at the same time and get her men.

Recently she came down to Hankow in a crowded refugee train to report to the Government authorities and to secure more military supplies for her units. Her arrival escaped public notice, but when she left a few days later, many army commanders were on hand to see her off. They stood to attention and saluted as her train slowly pulled out of the station.

The last thing which her farewellers saw was a broad smile on her weather-beaten, deeply furrowed face. Her cup of happiness was brimming over

after the successful conclusion of her important mission, which had taken her hundreds of miles from the hills on the Hopei-Shansi-Chahar border, where her brave men are lurking ready to swoop upon Japanese supply convoys or isolated outposts;

Wife of an once well-to-do Manchurian farmer named Chao, this woman captain of Chinese mobile fighter prefers to be known by her maiden name Feng Wen-kuo. Bitter lessons of alien oppression provided by Japanese troops have made her a superpatriot. She has vowed revenge on the Japanese for taking away all her husband's lands. As a child, she saw Japan's invasion of 1894-5 and dedicated her life to anti-Japanese activity. In 1933, two years after Japanese occupation of Manchuria, she, her husband and their eight daughters and one son turned volunteers—or bandits in the Japanese terminology. Two years of deadly hide-and-seek with Japanese patrols up in northern Kirin made every member of the family a sharpshooter.

About 18 months ago, with Japanese hot pursuit on their trail, they left Manchuria to settle

down in Weihsien on the Shansi-Chahar border. Scarcely had they gathered three crops when the Japanese troops were on the march again last July. Once again the Chahars were forced to abandon all their possessions.

At a family conference, it was decided to avenge their losses by becoming regular guerrilla fighters. The mother was a great organizer. From village to village she walked, preaching resistance among similarly-fated peasants. Soon she had a good following. As for rifles and munitions, their acquisition was no trouble to her. Through an intricate system of spies, she always learned the whereabouts of lone Japanese garrisons and then ordered her men to pay them a "courtesy call." Usually the raiders returned with rifles and ammunition for guerrilla recruits.

Once when she was spreading the gospel of mass resistance in a rural town in northern Shansi, farmers there thought she was bluffing.

"You are an old woman, what do you know of guerrilla warfare?" these farmers scornfully asked.

Instead of arguing, she told them to follow

her. After having climbed a hill, they sighted three members of a Japanese mounted patrol silhouetted against the evening sky. From under her apron, she pulled her Mauser pistol. She took aim. Bang! Bang! Two of the soldiers tumbled from their mounts and the third fled incontinently.

From that particular town alone, more than 200 vigorous farmers joined her forces. Her field commander is her son Chao Tung. It is he who leads most of their lightning raids on the invaders, while she thinks her usefulness greater in arousing the villagers and in organizing them for her son's "assorted army."

During her recent sojourn in Hankow, she was asked to attend a group discussion meeting called by local women. It was too much for her to listen to the talks. At last, her patience was exhausted. Springing upright, she cried:

"Most of you know why China is fighting Japan. You don't have to be told any more about it. On the other hand, people in the villages are still ignorant. Why don't you go there and talk to the peasants instead of all these disputes in a

comfortably furnished room?"

She wants action and plenty of it. During the past three or four months, her patriotic mission has taken her to practically every village on the Shansi-Chahar-Hopei border. Wherever she goes, she talks to the people and urges them to rise in arms against the Japanese. Mainly because of her untiring efforts and infectious patriotism, her son is now at the head of an ever-growing army of 10,000 elusive fighters.

Affectionately called by men under her as "Mother of the Army," this 57-year-old woman was not a bit social during her visit in Hankow. She flatly turned down all invitations to feasts. On the day of her departure a motor-car was sent to her lodging-house.

"What, a motor-car! Just imagine what my men would say if they should hear about my riding in a motor-car? They might even think I have become rich and forgotten their hardships in fighting the Japanese in the bitter cold up north."

She walked from her abode to the station.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

- guerrilla 游擊隊
northern section of the Peiping-Hankow Rail-
way 平漢鐵路之北段
endless 無窮的
peasant woman 農婦
silvery-haired 白髮的
sturdy 強健的
oak 橡樹
Mauser pistol 毛瑟手鎗
get her men 射中其所射之人：
Government authorities 政府當局
units 部隊
escape public notice 避免衆人注意
on hand 到場
to see one off 送行
attention 立正
salute 行敬禮
pull out of the station 開出車站
fareweller 送別者
a broad smile 滿足的微笑

weather-beaten 風霜侵蝕的

furrowed 起綫紋的

cup of happiness 此義出于基督教聖經中 St. John
卷內之一句: "The cup which the Father have
given me, shall I not drink it?"

brim over 滿溢

Hopei-Shansi-Chahar border 冀晉察三省邊境

lurk 埋伏

swoop upon 突然攫取

supply convoy 軍需護送隊

isolated outpost 孤立之前哨

well-to-do 富裕的

Manchurian 滿洲的

Chao 趙(姓)

mobile 流動的

prefer 寧願

Feng Wen-kuo 馮文國

alien 外國的

oppression 壓迫

superpatriot 超乎尋常之愛國者

vow revenge 立誓復仇

dedicate one's life to 獻身於

bandit 匪徒

-
- terminology 術語
deadly 致命的
hide-and-seek 捉迷藏
patrol 巡邏隊
Kirin 吉林(省)
sharp-shooter 善射者
with Japanese hot pursuit on their tail 有日本
人緊追於後
settle down 定居(某處)
Weihsien 濰縣
Scarcely.....when.....甫……即
on the march 進行
abandon 拋棄
possessions 財產
avenge 爲之報仇
regular 正式的
preach 宣傳
similarly-fated 同樣命運的
a good following 多數的從者
acquisition 獲得
an intricate system of spies (Singular: spy) 密
佈之間諜組織
whereabouts 所在

- garrison 守備隊
 to pay them a courtesy call 向彼等作懇勸之拜訪
 (意指襲擊寇軍)
 mass resistance 民衆抗戰
 bluff 虛張聲勢
 scornfully 譏諷地
 argue 辯論
 sight(v.) 看見
 mounted patrol 騎兵巡邏隊
 silhouetted 映出半面黑影
 apron 帷裙
 took (past tense of "take") aim 瞄準
 bang 轟然一擊聲
 tumble 滾轉; 跌倒
 mounts (always plural) 乘騎之馬
 fled (past tense of "flee") 逃
 incontinently (slang) 即刻
 villager 村民
 assorted army 雜牌軍隊
 sojourn 逗留
 a group discussion meeting 小組討論會
 local 地方的
 Her patience was exhausted 她忍不住了!

- spring 跳
 upright 直
 comfortably furnished 設備舒適的
 practically 實際上
 urge 督促
 'rise in arms' against the Japanese 起而武裝抗日
 untiring efforts 不懈之努力
 'infectious' 易感染的
 patriotism 愛國心
 'ever-growing' 時時增長的
 'elusive' 不可捉摸的
 affectionately 親愛地
 'a bit' 稍
 'social' 社交的
 'flatly' 絕對地
 'turn down' 置之罔聞
 'invitations to feasts' 宴會之邀請
 'lodging-house' 住房
 hardship 艱苦
 'abode' 寓所

Lesson 17

Men Against the World

By Marc T. Gyeene

The world is full of men and women—aye, and children too—wandering about without a home or country, with no idea where to go or even where to get anything to eat. Some are on the sea, denied landing in this country or that, ill-clothed and hungry, uncertain from one day to the next whether they are to go on living.

It is a sad state of things, one altogether unparalleled in what we call modern times. I have seen a good deal of it at close hand, seen and talked with refugees from here and there who are wandering aimlessly hither and yon, at the very bitter end of their resources, material and spiritual alike.

I saw the boatloads of them landing in Shanghai from Europe some months ago, not one in every ten with more than a few dollars in his pocket, some indeed without a cent. Yet they were coming

to the city of most misery of all today. They were coming there as there was nowhere else for them. They had journeyed ten thousand miles because Shanghai is the only place where you are accepted without "papers" or interrogations of any kind. You can land in Shanghai whoever you are and whenever you come. Yes, you can land, but what are you to do then?

I have just read of a group of 1,500 Jews who had somehow got on boats going down the Danube, thinking to reach the Black Sea and then, somehow Palestine. Finally they reached Belgrade where they were neither allowed to land nor granted clearance to go on to the sea. The press despatch left them in that state and failed to indicate what was to happen to them.

I suppose that, of all these wanderers, the outcasts of the destroyed state of Czecho-Slovakia are the most to be pitied, because you cannot out of all your reasoning and your sophistry get away from the fact that they were grossly betrayed. Whether the Czechoslovakia state, with all its incredible medley of the varied peoples of eastern

Europe, was wisely created or not is debatable. But the Czechs, under the leadership of the great Masaryk had made a worthy fight to justify the creation of their republic, assuming it all the while to be under the protection of the Powers which had brought about its being. By every tenet of righteousness and justice those, having created it, should have stood by it.

Mainly industrious, honest and personally engaging, they are making out better than some others. A few years ago the scheme was broached of establishing a colony of them in Tahiti. Sixty or seventy arrived but the project fell through. Nevertheless, a score or so remained. You find a Czech the manager of the chief hotel, Czechs and assistant manager of the Papeete electric and power works, a Czech running a fairly prosperous shoe store, two Czechs operating sweet shops, three or four owning copraplantations, others book-keepers in the large European trading concerns, one a photographer.

There was another Czech photographer. In fact he had a monopoly of the portrait photography

and had been in Tahiti four years after wandering that included a long stay in Abyssinia. For some reason he decided to leave Tahiti. He came to New Zealand the other day on the same steamer that brought me. Just yesterday I met him on the street. He was walking slowly along with depressed and discouraged mien. Seeing me, he brightened a little for I had been able to do him a trifling service.

I asked him how he liked Auckland. "I am very sad," he replied. "I greatly wish I had never left Tahiti." Why was he sad, here in this good New Zealand?

"Ah, my friend," he said, "it may be good for those who are acquainted. But to me it seems so very cold." He did not mean physically cold for this was mid-summer. "No one speaks to me," he elucidated, "and I feel that I am and always must be a stranger."

I explained that it was the British way. Britishers always held aloof from strangers, especially from central Europeans but they did not mean ill-will. He shrugged, "Where was the ever-manifest

friendliness, the gay spirits, the ebullient good-will of Tahiti?"

I reminded him of the fact that the world holds only one Tahiti. "Well," he told me, "I am going to the Fijis presently. And, what, my friend, shall I find Fijis like, of what chance for my profession? Is it, then, much like Tahiti being in the same tropical clime?"

"No," I said, "Fiji is not at all like Tahiti. It is far more like New Zealand, except only as to climate."

He reflected for a moment. "Until the war came," he said, "I was thinking of going back to my country, home where I have some people still—or had. But now my country is gone, my home, perhaps also my people. For me what is left but to wander about here and there without finding happiness or contentment? Millions, my friend, with the world against them and they against the world!"

"But why," I could not forbear asking, "did you leave Tahiti?"

He hesitated for some time before answering

this. "Believe me, my friend," he said at last, "it was not of choice. For whoever, having lived for a considerable time there, desires to leave? No it was circumstances I could not control that necessitated it. I am another of the millions of my countrymen, millions from other countries, for whom the world has no place, millions ever on the march that knows no halt, yet asking only to live!"

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

aye 是：然

with no idea where to go 意想不到往何處去

denied landing 拒絕登陸

ill-clothed 衣衫襤褸的

to go on living 繼續活着

unparalleled 無比的

modern times 現代

at close hand 在近邊；就近

aimlessly 無目的地

hither and yon 到處

at the very bitter end of their resources,
material and spiritual alike 物質與精神上均陷

絕境

boatload 滿船

not one in every ten 十人中不到一人

misery 不幸

papers 文件

interrogation 盤問

read of (從報上)讀到

Jew 猶太人

Danube 多瑙河

Black Sea 黑海

Palestine 巴勒斯坦(舊猶太國)

Belgrade 南斯拉夫首都

clearance 出港許可

press despatch left them in that state 報上電訊

到此為止

outcast 被逐之人

Czech-Slovakia 捷克斯拉夫(國)

out of 由於

reasoning 論辯

sophistry 詭辯

get away 除去

grossly 完全地

betray 出賣

-
- incredible 難以置信的
medley 混雜
varied peoples 各色的民族
debatable 有辯論餘地的
Czech 捷克人
Masaryk 捷克第一任總統
to justify the creation of their republic 使彼等
共和國之創立成爲正當
assume 以爲；臆斷
all the while 始終
bring about 造成
tenet 主義
righteousness 正義
stand by 護持
Slovak 斯拉伐克人
industrious 勤勞的
personally 容貌上
engaging 動人的
make out 立身處世
broach 公布；談及
Tahiti 島名(在南太平洋)
project 計劃
fall through 失敗

-
- nevertheless 然而
a score or so 二十人左右
Papeete electric and power works 巴沛第
(Tahiti首邑)電力工廠
run a store 開設一店
fairly 頗
operate sweet shop 經營糖果店
copraplantation 椰子田
trading concern 商行
photogragher 攝影師
monopoly 獨占；專利
portrait photograghy 照相業
Abyssinia 阿比西尼亞國
New Zealand 新西蘭
depressed 憂鬱的
discouraged 沮喪的
mien 態度
brighten 有喜色
a trifling service 微勞
Auckland 新西蘭北海港
elucidate 說明
hold aloof 遠離
ill-will 惡意

shrug	聳肩
ebullient	熱情充溢的
Fijis	羣島名(在南太平洋)
tropical	熱帶的
clime	氣候
against the world	不容世界；與世界敵對
forbear	禁
of choice	出於自願
necessitate	使必要

Lesson 18

Life Story of the Generalissimo

By John Gunther

Chiang was born in the village of Chikow in the seaside district of Fenghua, Chekiang Province, in 1887. The inhabitants are mainly fisherfolk, traders, and the like, who for generations have been exposed to foreign influence.

He was certainly not of a rich family, but he was never desperately poor. His mother, like the mothers of Hitler, Stalin, and Kamel Ataturk, appears to have been a remarkable woman; of his

father, who died when he was a child, little is recorded. The family slaved to send him to school. In 1907 he cut off his queue——symbol that he intened to be “modern.”

He went to Japan when he was about nineteen to become an officer. He was not allowed, however, to enter Japanese military school without recommendation from the Manchu Government; so he returned to China, and studied in Paoting Military Academy near Peking. Then he went to Japan again, and entered the Military Staff College. He actually served several years in the Japanese army, which is as if some great French revolutionist had been an officer in the German army after a thorough training. But also in Japan he encountered an influence destined to alter the course of his life. He met some one much more important than any Japanese officer. He met Dr. Sun Yat-sen.

This was in 1909, when he was twenty-two. Dr. Sun Yat-sen was in exile. Promptly young Chiang became infected with Chinese nationalism. He stayed in Japan two more years, but he joined the Tungmenhui, a secret society of patriotic Chi-

nese, which was the forerunner of the Kuomintang. When, in 1911, the Manchu regime was overthrown in Peking and the Chinese Republic was born, Chiang set sail for China to join the revolution, though this meant technical desertion from the Japanese army. It is recorded that punctiliously he sent back his sword and uniform—by mail!

For five years roughly from 1911 to 1916, Chiang fought in the variety of minor civil wars and insurrections that implemented the revolution. Once his regiment saved Dr. Sun's life; he became known as an officer of integrity and vision. He was one of Sun's best subordinates, but in 1917 he quitted the army suddenly to go into business. This may have been foresight. He was roughly in the position of a young American who decides to enter politics; he knew that for a successful political career he had to have money—a lot of money—first. He set out to earn it. First he worked as a clerk in a brokerage house. His personality must have been strongly marked, because he was successfully "adopted" by two rich and influential men, who became his patrons. One

was Chen Chi-mei, who brought him into an underground secret society, devoted to Chinese nationalism among other things and who was later assassinated; the other was Chang Chin-kiang, a wealthy merchant who helped him win his fortune.

By 1921, Chiang was busy with military affairs and politics again; i.e., he was a revolutionist. On one occasion he spent fifty-six days aboard a warship in steady conference with Sun Yat-sen; in 1923, Sun sent him to Moscow, where he spent six months as a liaison officer; this was the first period of Russian association with the Chinese revolution. The next year Chiang, returning to China, became first principal of the newly organized Whampoa Military Academy in Canton. In 1925 Chiang was chairman of the standing committee of the Kuomintang, and when Dr. Sun Yat-sen died he assumed office as commander-in-chief of the nationalist army.

He has always been simple in manner and approach. Lewis Gannett, for instance, records his meeting with him in 1926:

“When I went to see Chiang Kai-shek in

Canton, I presented my card at the door of an inconspicuous two-story modern dwelling-house; the boy studied it and silently pointed upstairs. At the top of the stairs I met a pleasant-looking young man in an officer's uniform without distinguishing marks of rank."

"Where is Chiang Kai-shek?" I asked in simplified English.

"Yes, Chiang Kai-shek," the young man replied.

"Where, where, Chiang Kai-shek?" I repeated, puzzled.

The young man pointed to a bed-room; I entered and sat down. A moment later Chen Tsu-yen, a former Lehigh University student, came in and explained that the pleasant young officer was the Commander-in-Chief himself. The bare bed-room was his; it was also his work-room. The general ate nothing, and instead of tea he sipped hot water.

At this time he told Gannett that he would conquer and unify all China, which then seemed an utterly impossible dream; he said too that he

would cancel the unequal treaties (with foreign Powers) and "set China free". He stated "It will not be difficult; in one, two, at most three years, it will be done." But a good many things happened to deflect Chiang from this course.

In 1926 began Chiang's most amazing exploit, and one of the most amazing ever performed by anyone anywhere. He set out on the gigantic, the illimitable task of unifying China by military conquest. At this time, it should be recalled, the Kuomintang held power only in the extreme south. It is quite true that many forces helped Chiang in the campaigns that then electrified the world. The country was sagging with corruption and decay. Rival warlords were eliminating each other endlessly. Not much stiff resistance was encountered. There was no granite Chiang had to hew through. Even so, his achievement was remarkable. His armies captured Wuhang in October, 1926; Hangchow in February, 1927; Shanghai and Nanking in March, 1927; Peking in July, 1928. This campaign is one of the seminal facts of modern history. Chiang made China, which was a continent, into

a country.

HELPS TO STUDY

The above is selected from "Inside Asia," a book written by John Gunther, a notable American journalist.

VOCABULARY

Chikow 溪口(鎮名)
 Fenghua 奉化(縣名)
 fisherfolk 漁夫
 trader 商人
 and the like 諸如此類
 for generations 數代
 desperately poor 赤貧
 Hitler 希特勒(德元首)
 Stalin 史丹林(蘇聯領袖)
 Kamel Ataturk 凱末爾(土耳其已故領袖)
 record 記載
 slave 做苦工
 cut off his queue 剪去髮辮
 symbol 象徵
 Paoting Military Academy 保定軍官學校
 Manchu Government 滿清政府
 Military Staff College 士官學校(日本)

-
- recommendation 介紹
revolutionist 革命家
encounter 邂逅
destined 注定
exile 放逐
became infected with nationalism 受民族主義之
薰陶
Tungmenghui 同盟會
forerunner 前身;先鋒
Kuomintang 國民黨
regime 政體
was overthrown 被推翻
set sail for 乘船往
technical desertion 技術上之私逃兵役
punctiliously 拘泥形式地
sword 劍
uniform 制服
roughly 大概
minor 較小的
civil war 內戰
insurrection 叛亂
implement(v.) 完成
an officer of integrity and vision 正直而有眼光

之軍官

- regiment 團
subordinate 部屬
quit 離去
to go into business 從事商業
foresight 先見;遠慮
a lot of 許多
set out 開始
earn 賺
brokerage house 交易所
personality 人格
mark 表現
adopt 錄用
influential 有勢力的
patron 主顧;扶助者
Chen Chi-mei 陳其美
underground 祕密的
assassinate 暗殺
Chang Chin-kiang 張靜江
win fortune 致富
on one occasion 有一次
aboard a warship 在一兵艦上
conference 討論;會商

-
- Moscow 莫斯科
liaison officer 聯絡軍官
association 聯絡
Whampoa Military Academy 黃浦軍官學校
chairman 主席
standing committee 常務委員會
assume office as 就...之職
commander-in-chief 總司令;大元帥
card 名片
the nationalist army 國民軍
inconspicuous 不引人注意的
simple in manner and approach 態度率真而易於
接近
Lewis Gannett 一記者名字
two-story 兩層
study 思索
Chen Tsu-yen 陳樹人
distinguishing marks of rank 分別階級之符號
bare 無陳設的
Lehigh University 里海大學(美國)
sip 啜
unify 統一
all China 全中國

-
- utterly 完全
cancel 取消
unequal treaty 不平等條約
Power 強國
deflect one from this course 使不能進行
amazing 令人驚愕的
exploit 偉業
gigantic 鉅大的
illimitable 無限制的
recall 回想
electrify the world 震驚世界
sag 萎頓
held power only in the extreme south 僅在極南
保有勢力
corruption 腐敗
decay 衰弱
warlords 軍閥
eliminate 除去
endlessly 不斷地
stiff resistance 堅強之抵抗
granite 花崗石(譬喻堅固)
hew through 砍穿
capture 奪得

seminal 重要的

Lesson 19

Winston Churchill

Reward—Dead or Alive:

“Englishman, 25 years old, about 5 ft. 8 in. tall, indifferent build, walks with a forward stoop, pale appearance, red brownish hair, small and hardly noticeable mustache, talks through his nose and cannot pronounce the letter S properly.”

On the walls and poles of the Transvaal this handbill was pasted one day during the Boer War. It described a young newspaper reporter who had fought like a professional soldier when a British armored train was ambushed by Boers; had been captured and held as prisoner of war, had climbed over the ten-foot iron fence of his prison with no map or compass, but little money and some cubes of chocolate in his pockets, and had eventually taken refuge at the bottom of a mine. It described and—with the exception of the age and the mustache, which was just a medal of not-quite-certain manhood—still does describe Winston

Churchill.

Young Winnie Churchill's fabulous escape from Pretoria made him world-famous while he was still trying to prove he could grow whiskers. But the escape has a wider significance than that. It symbolizes Winston Churchill as Winston Churchill so aptly and lovingly symbolizes Great Britain's unwillingness to give up when apparently cornered.

There is an extraordinary fact about English democracy—namely, that at almost any given time some English leader turns out to be a perfect symbol of his people. At the time of Edward VIII's abdication, Stanley Baldwin was the typical Englishman. At the time of the Munich Crisis, Neville Chamberlain was pathetically typical. But during the fourth week of September 1940, Winston Churchill was the essence of his land. The three men are as dissimilar as fog, rain and hail, which are all water. But the country they ruled has changed. This England is different.

Winston Churchill is tough. The first important thing he does when he is awakened at 7:15 every morning is to light a cigar. The only thing

his tongue is afraid of is still that S. His mind requires and retains whole libraries of facts. His spirit loves good food, good drink, pretty and witty women. His body tolerates terrific burdens. He wears out whole squads of secretaries. He talks down platoons of men who have hated and now love him. He is no umbrella-fancies, and he carries a cane not to support his 65-year-old body but to prod, strike and point with. He is persistent. The way he got the unwilling Lord Beaverbrook into his cabinet was to call him up every two hours, day and night, for 36 hours. He knows no fear. During air raids he often rushes into the gardens of No. 10 with no protection but a "battle bowler." He loves life and liberty so much that he has nearly killed and thoroughly enslaved himself a hundred times over in the past six months. Dorothy Thompson calls him "the great life-affirmer." This week Miss Thompson praised him as a man of action—"as soldier, war correspondent and public servant in high places.....One sometimes has the feeling that the man has skipped a century, harking back to less pedestrian and comfort-loving times,

to older and more tested virtues. The timorous understatement, characteristic of bourgeois decline is swept away in a lofty eloquence Addressing the people, 'We shall draw from the heart of suffering itself the means of inspiration and survival,' he restores to the leadership of Britain the nobleman, in its exact sense of being a man and being noble."

Hitler fears Churchill, and implicitly admitted it when he made it clear in a speech at Saarbrücken that the inclusion of Winston Churchill in the Cabinet would be considered an act of hostility. So supine was Britain then that the country's leaders, who also feared this man of thick blood, grasped at the Hitler threat as an excuse to keep Churchill down.

Like the tragic Britain of which he is trademark, Churchill is eloquent. The measured sequences of Pitt, the roars of Samuel Johnson, the lips of Addison, the thunder of Milton, the heroic triviality of Kipling treble in his sagging, pouting, one sided mouth. He is ruthless in his larceny of others' vocabulary, but has a bottomless

of wit of his own. His reports to Parliament and the nation, which with Chamberlain were about as poetic as a brick wall, are often almost epic. Last fortnight he spoke of Hitler, and gave his people something real to fight for:

"This wicked man, the repository and embodiment of many forms of soul-destroying hatreds, this monstrous product of former wrongs and shames, has now resolved to try to break our famous island race by a process of indiscriminate slaughter and destruction.

"What he has done is to kindle a fire in British hearts here and all over the world which will glow long after all traces of the conflagrations he has caused in London have been removed.

"He has lighted a fire which will burn with a steady and consuming flame until the last vestiges of Nazi tyranny have been burned out of Europe and until the Old World and the New can join hands to rebuild the temples of man's freedom and man's honor upon a foundation which will not soon or easily be overthrown."

Winston Churchill represents the elite of

Britain's past, the humble of her present. He is descended from a long line of aristocratic leaders, but he is the son of a younger son. Descendant of the first Duke of Marlborough, who commanded at Blenheim and Malplaquet, grandson of the seventh Duke of Marlborough, but also grandson of a New York City newspaperman, he sums up two Britains, both of which are in the present war up to the hilt: the Britain of military aristocracy and that of the people who, like Churchill, have difficulty in pronouncing a letter—theirs is H. He could, if he wanted, wear his old school (Harrow) tie; instead he wears a cocky, defiant bow. He is a Tory, an imperialist, and has been a strike-breaker and Red-baiter; and yet, when he tours the gutted slums of London, old women say: "God bless you, Winnie."

HELPS TO STUDY

The above selection is from "Time", a weekly news-magazine published in America. It gives a vivid depiction as well as an accurate comprehension of Winston Churchill, the present Prime Minister of the British Empire.

VOCABULARY

- reward 懸賞(緝拿)
- indifferent build 中等體格
- stoop 偻僂
- hardly noticeable mustache 不易覺察之鬚
- the Transvaal 本為南非一共和國，現為南非聯邦一省
- handbill 傳單
- paste 黏貼
- Boer War 英與南非荷蘭種移民之戰
- professional soldier 以作戰為業之軍人
- armored train 裝甲列車
- was ambushed 中埋伏
- fence 柵；圍牆
- compass 指南針
- some cubes of chocolate 幾塊巧克力糖
- eventually 最後
- take refugee 逃避
- fabulous 難信的；超乎常理的
- whiskers 鬍鬚
- significance 意義；重要
- symbolize 象徵
- aptly 適當地；敏捷地

- give up 罷休；放棄
- apparently 顯然
- corner(verb) 陷於絕境
- namely 卽
- at any given time 就任何時期而言
- abdication 遜位
- Stanley Baldwin 英王愛德華第八之首相因愛德華
第八與辛浦森夫人結婚請其遜位
- Munich Crisis 慕尼黑危機(指一九三八年捷克問題
嚴重時)
- Neville Chamberlain 邱吉爾以前之英首相
- pathetically 動人情感地
- essence 必不可少者；要素
- dissimilar 不同的
- fog 霧
- hail 雹
- tough 強健的
- to light a cigar 燃着一枝雪茄煙
- retain 牢記
- tolerate terrific burdens 耐受驚人之負荷
- wear out whole squads of secretaries 使全體關
員精疲力竭
- talk down platoons of men 駁倒許多人

- umbrella-fancies 傘之幻想(張伯倫首相常攜傘)
- prod 刺; 戮
- persistent 固執的
- Lord Beaverbrook 卑維勃魯克爵士(英現任閣員)
- No. 10 指唐寧街(Downing Street)十號英首相官邸
- “battle bowler”: bowler 本為低頂氈帽，此處指鋼盔
- Dorothy Thompson 女人名
- “great life-affirmer” 偉大的“生之確定者”
- skip 跳過
- harking back to less pedestrian and comfort-loving times 復返於不平凡與不耽於逸樂之時代
- timorous 膽怯的
- understatement 不盡真實之言
- characteristic of Bourgeois decline 特別表明資產階級之沒落者
- implicitly 含蓄地
- Saarbrücken 德國一城名
- an act of hostility 敵對之行爲
- supine 怠惰的
- keep down 抑制
- excuse 托辭; 辯解之理由
- measured sequences of Pitt (政治家) Pitt (演說) 的整齊的聯絡

-
- roars of Samuel Johnson (文學家) Johnson (演說)的宏大的聲音
- lisps of Addison (詩人) Addison 的含糊發音
- thunder of Milton (詩人) Milton 的怒喝
- heroic triviality of Kipling (小說家) Kipling 的
非常的瑣細
- sagging 下陷的
- pouting 努脣的
- larceny of others' vocabulary 竊取他人之用語
- epic 詠史詩一般的
- repository 倉庫；貯藏所
- embodiment 具體
- soul-destroying hatreds 殘忍之憎恨
- monstrous 畸形的
- indiscriminate 不分皂白的
- kindle 點燃
- glow 熾盛
- conflagration 大火；火災
- elite 精英
- aristocratic 貴族的
- the son of a younger son 言其不富也英國人財產
向歸長子承繼
- Marlborough 新西蘭省區之一

Blenheim 德國巴威省村名
 Malplaquet 法國北部一小村名
 up to the hilt 完全；十足
 cocky 不客氣的
 defiant 不講禮的
 bow 蝶形頭結
 Tory 保守黨員
 strike-breaker 罷工破壞者
 Red-baiter 虐待共產黨者
 gutted slums 內部毀壞之陋巷
 Winnie 爲 Winston 之暱稱

Lesson 20

Greetings to the Golden Gate International Exposition at San Francisco

I am greatly honored in being called upon to address you on this auspicious occasion of the opening of the Golden Gate International Exposition and I am glad to have this opportunity to speak to the people of America again.

You are, I understand, celebrating the completion of the San Francisco Oakland Bridge and the Golden Gate Bridge. Both of them are marvels of modern engineering of which you may feel justly proud. I wish to offer you my heartiest congratulations.

We admire such great achievements of the American people. Were it not for our present unfortunate circumstances, China would certainly have taken full advantage of your President's invitation to take part in this great Exposition. I regret the hostilities here have compelled my Government to cancel its plan for official participation. But still, I am glad that a number of my people have taken upon themselves to represent China unofficially and on a modest scale.

I have no doubt that the Exposition, designed as it is to depict and exhibit the progress and accomplishments of the Pacific area of the United States in science, industry, transportation and culture, and benefitted in addition by splendid exhibits from other nations of the world, will reveal in full glory the manifold aspects of modern

civilization. Every country will be soon at its best and each, I am sure, has something peculiarly its own to contribute to the whole of the magnificent display.

Everything to be seen at the Exposition is the product of human ingenuity. Each exhibit is an expression of goodwill, executed in peace for the general benefit of mankind. It seems to me, therefore, that the Exposition will serve not only to illustrate the brilliance and high standard of modern achievements but also to reveal the magnitude that such achievements could attain and the stride that undisturbed progress could take under the favorable conditions of peace and general security. Indeed, this international assemblage of all that is best in modern civilization in an atmosphere of cordiality and happy co-operation should strongly remind us of the higher levels to which our lives should be lifted if all unnecessary obstacles to the pursuit of peace and happiness were to be removed for the good of mankind in general. The potentialities of international peace and goodwill are really boundless.

Unfortunately, there are on the international horizon many dark clouds which threaten the very basis of our civilization. In the Far East we have been the victim of wanton aggression. For eighteen months we have witnessed the horrors and devastation of war. Millions of my people have been driven from their wrecked homes, rendered destitute and suffering in intense misery.

We have had to fight against heavy mechanical odds and we have made tremendous sacrifices. But what we lacked in equipment we have made up with valor, and we are fighting with the knowledge that Right is on our side, that we are not fighting for our own independence and freedom but also for certain immutable principles upon which alone peace can be made to endure. That is to say, we are also fighting for the cause of international justice and good faith; for the re-enthronement of the sanctity of treaties; and for the revival of the spirit of reason and conciliation in international relations. This, I believe, is a universal cause which all peace-loving peoples of the world should strive to uphold. We are deeply grateful for the

moral as well as material support which we have received from the American people in the course of our armed resistance against aggression.

While I am moved to congratulate my American friends on their good fortune in being able to pursue their constructive work in undisturbed peace, I wish to emphasize that peace and security, in order to be lasting, must prevail throughout the world. It is my conviction that peace is indivisible; that under modern conditions the disturbance of peace in any part of the globe endangers the peace of the whole world. If civilization is to be preserved and made secure we must do all we can to check the forces of violence and destruction.

And yet I regret to admit that present world conditions are far from what we desire. The collapse of international moral standards is more apparent now than ever. The sanctity of the pledged word appears to have crumbled under the heavy tread of the aggressor, while reason and justice have to bow to brute force. The encroachments of lawlessness are impinging even more closely upon the vital points of the world's peace structure and

the life of every man is blighted by the constant fear of another world catastrophe.

The time has certainly come for the forces of peace to assert themselves in some positive and practical manner, for it does appear that a mere negative attitude of peace is no longer sufficient to counter-act the assaults upon the security and stability of the world. Peace can no longer be preserved in isolation in any one part of the world and conflict confined to another. The effects of either are bound to tell on the community of nations which have now become so mutually interdependent and so closely knit together by modern means of communication.

Referring now more specifically to the situation in the Pacific region, I would appeal to all peace-loving peoples of the world, and to the American people in particular, to abandon their hesitation to play a more positive part in combating the forces militating against international justice and order in this part of the world. Peace must be positively maintained and peace must be made to endure if man's achievements and progress such as are

reflected at the Exposition are to be saved from annihilation.

In the coming months millions of Americans will be visiting the great international fair. They will have an opportunity to see the progress made by the United States under the auspices of peace and democracy. I am sure every American visitor to the Exposition will feel, on leaving its ground, prouder than ever of his country, of its history and of the free institutions which have produced such progress.

Many are the good things of civilization which you will be privileged to see at the Exposition. It is well to remember that they have come to us through peace. They can only be enjoyed in peace. Their preservation can only be assured by the prevalence of peace throughout the world.

In wishing your Exposition an unqualified success I look forward to the eventual triumph, through concerted international efforts, of those principles upon which peace and civilization are founded.

HELPS TO STUDY

The above is a speech delivered by Dr. Wang Chung-hui, China's Minister of Foreign Affairs, over Broadcasting Station XGOX, Chungking, to America on February 19, 1939.

VOCABULARY

- call upon 要求
 address 演說
 on this auspicious occasion 在茲吉慶之時會
 Golden Gate International Exposition 金門國際
 博覽會
 San Francisco 三藩市(亦稱舊金山)
 Oakland 沃克蘭市(美加州)
 marvel 奇觀;奇蹟
 engineering 工程學
 justly 正當地
 heartiest 竭誠的
 congratulation 慶賀
 were it not=if it were not
 take part 參加
 regret 抱歉;遺憾
 cancel 取消
 official participation 官方之參加

take upon one's self 担任
exhibit 呈露; 展覽
splendid 精美的
manifold 種種的
at its best 最得意; 盡力
peculiarly 特殊地
magnificent display 堂皇富麗之展覽
goodwill 善意
magnitude 偉大
atmosphere of cordiality and happy co-operation 誠懇與愉快合作之氛圍
remind us of 使我們想起
level 程度
potentiality 可能性
boundless 無窮的
horrors 慘狀
devastation 破壞; 蹂躪
wrecked homes 破毀之家
destitute 貧窮
in intense misery 在非常之災禍中
We have had to fight against heavy mechanical odds 我等已不得不與器械上佔優勢之敵對戰
tremendous 驚人的

-
- equipment 裝備
make up 補足
valor 勇氣
with the knowledge that.... 因深知...
Right 正義
immutable 不變的
re-enthronement 重登皇位(此處借以喻重爲人所尊
重之意)
strive 努力
uphold 擁護;支持
moral as well as material support 精神與物質之
援助
in the course of 在...之時
emphasize 鄭重言之
lasting 持久的
prevail 盛行
indivisible 不可分的
globe 地球
endanger 使受危險
preserve 保存
make secure 使穩固
crumble 消失;崩壞
tread 蹂躪

bow to brute force 屈服於暴力
encroachment 侵害
lawlessness 無法;非法
impinge upon 侵犯
blight 妨害;使枯萎
catastrophe 禍患
positive 積極的
negative 消極的
counter-act 反抗
interdependent 互相依賴
knit 聯合
specifically 特別
appeal to 呼籲
in particular 尤其
militate against 交戰
annihilation 毀滅
international fair 國際賽會
under the auspices of 在--保護之下
on leaving its ground 甫離會場(指博覽會)
free institutions 自由之制度
well(adj.) 適宜的
unqualified 無限制的
concerted 協調的

Lesson 21**China Gets to Work**

By Pearl S. Buck

China's offensive against Japan is characteristically not an offensive of arms but of industry. In doing this she is meeting Japan's attack at its most crucial point. For Japan's keenest thrust at China has not been military but economic. What they want is China's life—that is, the trade and resources which have made and kept China a great and powerful nation for so many centuries.

If the Chinese can survive this war economically they can win it. To lose cities has been not too important, to lose land has not been too catastrophic. What is close to catastrophe is the fact that the rapidly growing heavy industry of the past two decades in China is now, seventy per cent of it, either destroyed or in Japanese control, and Japanese trade with China is alarmingly on the increase. Many Japanese merchants and industrialists come to China every month. In the occupied cities many goods bought and sold are Japanese.

Some of China's most alert minds are now at work upon the problem of how to combat Japan industrially. Warfare goes on and must go on, but it is accepted that China cannot compete with Japan in arms. Guerrilla warfare will be ceaseless, but at best it will not solve the problem of Japanese occupation.

The one weapon, therefore, against Japan's increasing possession of China's economic life is the establishment as quickly, as possible by the Chinese themselves of new centres of industry which can absorb the many working people now without work and set them again to producing Chinese goods for Chinese to use. This is more than relief. It is an act of real resistance against Japan, because it sets up competition for Japanese goods and utilizes Chinese resources, both natural and human, which would otherwise out of sheer necessity empty themselves into Japan's industrial stream. The Chinese have long known that if China can keep possession of her own raw materials and her own markets, Japan will be defeated in the main purpose of the war. As the great

industrial cities along the Yangtze fell one by one, they planned to move the remaining plants inland, to cities farther up the river. Bankers and technical experts have come to a Common conclusion,—that the new industrial movement must be made in small units, financed cooperatively.

So there is heartening news from China—the most heartening for many months. There is now being organized in China a vast scheme of co-operative industry, to make use of as many as possible of [the millions of war refugees and especially of the factory workers of Shanghai and other cities, nearly all of them thrown out of work by the invasion.

The plan, in brief, is that in any locality a group of craftsmen may organize into a society, the minimum being seven persons. No member is allowed to own more than twenty per cent of the stock. There are definite rules about buying raw materials and selling products. Profits, when they are earned, will be divided among the members. Each society is carefully supervised by a central committee, in order to develop self-management.

This central committee is the National Industrial Co-operative Commission, sponsored by the Executive Yuan of the Central Government. It includes some of China's best engineers, technicians and labor organizers, as well as expert foreign advisers.

The plan of the Industrial Co-operative Commission, calls for thirty thousand co-operatives, which, if each unit involves directly and indirectly one hundred and fifty producers and at the same time increase China's dying production and shrinking markets.

The central headquarters for the whole movement is now in Chungking. This headquarters acts nationally and also for the provinces of Hupeh, Szechwan, Sikong and Yunnan. Of raw materials there are plenty in this region, but work has only just begun.

Every Chinese and every friend of China should help in this attack upon the Japanese, on the industrial front. Rich Chinese should give more than they have. The wealthy Chinese overseas have given most generously. A little money goes a heartening long way in China. One

American woman gave to the co-operatives fifty dollars in United States currency. With it seventeen Chinese-made weaving machines were bought and these gave employment to sixty persons in a unit.

There are many interesting points which come to one's mind in surveying the possibilities of this new industrial movement in China. China's old strength was always in her decentralized industries, the home industries of her villages and families. A few years ago the great English economist R. H. Tawney, in his excellent study of Chinese industry entitled "Land and Labour in China," made his conclusion, that China should, for the economic welfare of her people, stay by her own ancient system of the small industry rather than industrialize in the large centralized fashion of the West. To the latter system, however, she was developing until Japan destroyed her factories. Now she is turning back to the sources of her ancient strength.

The development of industrial co-operatives at the present moment in China is of the utmost meaning. It gives relief and life to the destitute

refugees, it maintains a native industry in the face of Japan's foreign economic aggression and, most important of all, it provides a new and inexhaustible source of moral strength and confidence for the Chinese people. It gives work to the working man, to the trained expert and to China's eager young. By bringing industry back to life in hundreds of places they are staying the destruction. Working-man and intellectuals can find through co-operatives a new Chinese industry. Together they can fight Japan.

HELPS TO STUDY

Pearl S. Buck is a living American authoress who has made an undying reputation through the publication of her "Good Earth", "Sons," and "The House Divided." She is now one of the editors of "Asia", reviewing books on the Far Eastern questions.

VOCABULARY

get to 着手；從事

Characteristically 特殊地

crucial 決定的

keenest thrust 最銳利的推進力

resources 資源
survive this war 雖經此戰爭而猶存在
catastrophic 不幸的
heavy industry 重工業
decade 十年
alarmingly 驚人地
on the increase 常常增加
industrialists 實業家
alert minds 指頭腦靈敏之人
at work 正在研究
accept 承認
at best 至極
set one to 使之從事於
relief 賑濟
set up 建立
sheer 絕對的
empty 流出
raw materials 原料
plant 應用器械
technical experts 技術專家
come to a conclusion 得一決議
finance co-operatively 合作投資
heartening 令人鼓舞的

- in brief 簡而言之
- locality 地方
- craftsman 做手藝者
- minimum 最小數量
- sponsored 被負責照管
- National Industrial Co-operative Commission
中國工業合作協會
- Executive Yuan 行政院
- technician 技術人員
- dying production 漸漸消滅之生產事業
- shrinking market 漸漸縮小之市場
- overseas 在海外者(指華僑)
- a little money goes a long way; (idiom) 少許的
錢能做很多有益的事
- currency 貨幣
- unit 單位區
- survey 縱覽
- decentralized 不集中的
- entitled 被命名為
- rather than 而不
- centralized fashion 集中的方式
- in the face of 對抗
- eager young 熱心的青年

intellectuals 智識份子

Lesson 22

Britain Doesn't Fight with
Blood-curdling Threats

By Winston Churchill

We are far stronger than we were at the beginning of the war and far better prepared to endure the worst malice of Hitler and his Huns.

Our navy is stronger, our anti-U-boat forces three times more numerous, our air force is much stronger, and our army is growing and improving in training every day.

Time is on our side.

A long procession of important events has moved in our favor since the beginning of war, affecting German relations with Italy and Japan, and what happened in Turkey and Russia, so now the boastful and bullying Nazis are looking hungrily for some small country in the west to trample down and loot.

But the fate of Holland and Belgium, like

Poland, Czechoslovakia and Austria, will be decided by the victory of Great Britain and France.

If we are conquered, all will be enslaved, and the United States will be left single-handed, to guard the rights of man.

If we are not destroyed all these countries will be restored to life.

Either all that Britain and France stand for in the modern world will go down or the Nazi regime and the German or Prussian menace to Europe will be broken and destroyed, and everybody had better make up their minds of that solid, somber fact.

The Nazis exude through the neutral states inside information of frightful vengeance they are going to wreak upon us, and also bawl it around the world by their propaganda machine.

If words could kill, we would be dead already.

Nobody in the British island supposed this was going to be a short easy war.

Nothing has impressed me more than the calm, steady and business-like resolution with which the masses of ordinary people faced what they ima-

gined would be the fearful storm about to fall upon them and their families, and they braced themselves for the ordeal.

The attacks of U-boats have been controlled, and they paid heavy toll.

Nearly all German ocean-going ships are rusting while our world-wide trade proceeds in 4,000 vessels, of which 2,500 are constantly at sea.

The superior quality of our air force over the enemy had been proved by both pilots and machines.

Our aircraft had shot down 15 German overseas raiders without losing one machine in combat.

We have a marked advantage in the higher range of science applied to war, and this is improving weekly.

If we pass the winter without a large and important event we shall have gained the first campaign in the war, and will be able to set about the task in the spring far stronger than before, and Germany will be falling back in oil and other war essentials.

If violent and dire events open we shall meet

them resolutely.

Nazi Germany barred from the east, turns to fierce glare upon the ancient, civilized and unoffending Dutch and Belgians.

They have not chosen to molest the British fleet and they recoil from the steel front along the Maginot Line, but their conscripts crowd the frontiers of Holland and Belgium, to both of whom they have given solemn guarantees, but as nobody believes Hitler we must regard the situation there as grave.

I have lived through the early months of the last German war in the same position as now, and therefore very careful not to say anything of an over-confident or unduly sanguine nature, but I have the conviction that that evil man over there and his cluster of confederates are not sure of themselves, as we are sure of ourselves.

They are harassed in their guilty souls by the fear of ever approaching retribution for their crimes.

As they look from the blatant panoplied gathering of Nazi Germany they cannot find a single

friendly eye.

Russia returns a flinty stare; Italy averts her gaze; Japan is puzzled and thinks herself betrayed; Turkey and the whole of Islam have ranged themselves instinctively and decisively on the side of progress.

Hundreds of millions in India and China would regard with undisguised dread a Nazi triumph, well knowing what their fate would be. Stalin, has barred off for ever all Nazi dreams of advance in the east.

America makes no secret of her sympathies.

Even in Germany millions stand aloof from the seething mass of criminality and corruption of the Nazi machine.

Let them take courage amid their perplexities and perils, for it may be that the final extinction of this baleful domination will pave the way to broader solidarity of all men in all lands than we could ever have planned if we had not marched together through the fire.

Italy has adopted a wise policy of peace.

No one can underrate the importance of the

treaty between Britain, France and Turkey.

The Soviet Government, embodied in the formidable figure of Stalin, has barred off for ever all Nazi dreams of advance in the east.

The left paw of the bear bars Germany from the Black Sea, and the right paw disputes with her the control of the Baltic.

Whatever history may record about these events the fact which we have to reckon with is perfectly plain. Nazi Germany is barred off from the east and has to conquer the British Empire and the French Republic or perish in the attempt.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

- malice 惡毒
 anti-U-boat 防潛水艇
 Turkey 土耳其國
 boastful 好矜誇的
 bullying 陵弱的
 loot 掠奪
 trample down 蹂躪
 Prussian 普魯士的

somber 沉悶的
exude 流出
frightful 可怖的
wreak upon 向 - 報復
business-like 徹底的
braced themselves 毅然振作
ordeal 大難
essentials 必需品
dire 可怕的;悲慘的
glare 虎視;瞋目
unoffending 無辜的
fleet 艦隊
Maginot Line 馬奇諾防線
conscripts 強迫入伍之兵
sanguine 樂觀的
cluster 一羣
retribution 還報
panoplied 披甲冑的
flinty stare 無情之注視
averts her gaze 轉而他顧
Islam 回教國
seething 騷動的
extinction 毀滅

baleful 有害的

underrate 輕視; 估價過低

paw 掌; 爪足

Black Sea 黑海

Baltic 波羅的海

reckon with 詰問是非

Lesson 23

America Must Fight.

By Walter Lippmann

For the second time in 26 years the American people have intervened in a war towards which they had meant to be neutral. Their second intervention has come much more quickly than did their first one. In February, 1917, when the United States broke off diplomatic relations with Germany, the Allies and the Central Powers had been fighting for 30 months; in February, 1941, when Congress began to enact the Lease-Lend Bill, the war had been going on only 17 months. Yet, though the second intervention has come so much more quickly, extraordinary measures had been taken to insure American neutrality. Con-

gress had spent years investigating the supposed causes of the first intervention. In 1935 and 1936 Congress had voted and the President had signed elaborate laws designed to remove the causes which, it was believed, had brought about the intervention of 1917.

Nevertheless, after a full debate in Congress and throughout the country, neutrality has been abandoned for the second time and the United States has again intervened. We have to ask ourselves why this has happened. We must have an explanation which really does explain not only why we have intervened both wars but why in each case we have intervened when we did intervene.

Thus it is not an explanation to say that intervention is due to bankers, munitions makers and capitalists. For while in 1917 the bankers had made loans to the Allies, in 1941 the bankers have made no loans to their Allies. In 1917 there was a great private munitions industry, and it has been said that the munitions makers feared that if the Allies lost, they would be unable to keep on selling the munitions that their expanded factories are

geared to produce. But in 1941, we find that America's munitions makers have more American orders than they can fill and that far from having too much capacity, they have not nearly enough for our own needs alone; if Britain lost, the United States would not only continue with every British contract but would surely vastly increase its own orders as well.

Nor is it an explanation to say that we intervened the first time because Germany torpedoed our ships. For in this second war we have carefully kept our ships out of reach of the Germany torpedoes. Not that we became entangled the first time because we failed to uphold our neutral rights equally against Britain and Germany. For in the second war surrendered equally our neutral rights against Germany and Britain.

Nor is it an explanation to say that in 1917 American policy was determined by hatred of the Kaiser and Prussianism and in 1941 by hatred of Hitler and Nazism. For 30 months before we intervened in February, 1917, the Kaiser was the same Kaiser. For the 17 months of this war Hitler

has been the same. Hitler. Nor is it an explanation to say that our action is determined by sentiment. For in the first World War, though Germany had violated Belgium, we did not intervene for 30 months, and in this war, though Germany had violated Austria, Czechoslovakia, Denmark, Norway, the Netherlands, Belgium, Luxemburg, we still believed that we would not intervene. Nor is it an explanation to say that our actions then or now have been determined by sympathy for the oppressed. For in the first World War Germany of the Hohenzollen was a far more liberal state than was Czarist Russia, and it was by Russia, not by Germany, that Jews and Poles were persecuted. Nor is it an explanation to say that the first time we were incited by Wilson to a crusade to make the world safe for democracy and this time by Roosevelt to a crusade to establish freedom "everywhere." For in the first war we never thought of crusading against the Russian tyranny and this time we have stood aloof from the Soviet tyranny for over 20 years, from the Fascist for nearly eight years.

None of these reasons, nor all of them together, will explain what we have to explain: why, intending to be neutral in 1941, we intervened in 1917; why, intending to be neutral in 1939, we have intervened in 1941. If we are to find the exact and genuine reason, we must explain these precise dates; if we can find the reasons which explain why in both instances we intervened when we intervened, we shall be justified in thinking that we know what we did in 1917 and what we are doing in 1941. And if we know that, if we really understand the two interventions, we shall, I believe, see clearly why and how we went so wrong the first time that we now have to do the work all over again for a second time.

We shall find the answer, I believe, in the fact that we intervened the first when, and only when, a victorious Germany was threatening to conquer Britain and to become the master of the other shore of the Atlantic Ocean; that we are intervening a second time at a similar point in the war and for exactly the same fundamental reason.

Then as now, as long as the German aggression

was confined within Central and Eastern Europe, the war was from the American point of view merely a European war. It was a war which, though American sympathies were aroused, did not engage the vital interests of the United States. But then, as now again, when the German aggression broke through the western defenses of Europe and invaded the Atlantic Ocean, its shores and its waters; the defenses of the United States were threatened and the American people felt that their vital interests were engaged.

In the first World War it took Germany somewhat more than two years to knock out Russia, to overrun the Balkans with the exception of Greece, to deal with Italy, and to bring France to a point where a military disaster and an internal collapse were an imminent possibility. In the winter of 1917 by its victories in the east the German army had won a free hand for all our assault in the west. Had that assault succeeded, it would have knocked out France and destroyed the British army. This would have given to Germany the French channel ports, and at the

same period in the first war the German submarine fleet was ready, as now once more it is ready, for an attack which threatened to blockade the British Isles, and to starve them into surrender.

In the second World War it took Hitler a little less than one year to reach a point in the West of Europe where he has very nearly achieved what the Kaiser was threatening to achieve in 1916—17. The first American intervention came when the Kaiser looked as if he might conquer Britain and establish himself as our nearest neighbour on the other side of the Atlantic Ocean. It was to prevent this from happening; it was when America saw that this might happen, that America intervened the first time. In this second World War, the movement was much faster, the outlook has seemed more desperate. But again we began to intervene when, and only when, the British control of the Atlantic was threatened; and we have decided for an all-out support of Britain when, and only when, it had been demonstrated by the strength of the British resistance that with sufficient American aid the Atlantic Ocean could be

defended by the British.

HELPS TO STUDY

Walter Lippmann, the writer of this article is
an eminent contemporary publicist of America.

VOCABULARY

intervene 干預

neutral 中立

broke(past of "break") off 斷絕

diplomatic 外交的

the Allies 第一次大戰中之協約國

Central Powers 第一次大戰中之同盟國即德奧集團

Congress (美國)國會

enact 制定

Lend-Lease Bill 租借案

insure 保證

investigate 研究；調查

vote 投票表決

elaborate 精密的

remove 除去

keep on 繼續

gear 裝置

as well 亦

-
- torpedo 魚雷炸沈
entangle 累及，陷入糾紛
uphold 保持
surrender 捨棄
Kaiser 德皇指威廉第二
Prussianism 普魯士主義，即窮兵黷武的侵略主義
Nazism 納粹主義，即希特勒揭橈之國家社會主義
violate 侵犯
Austria 奧地利國(現為德吞併)
Denmark 丹麥國
Norway 挪威國
the Netherlands 荷蘭國
Belgium 比利時國
Luxemburg 盧森堡國
the oppressed 被壓迫者
Hohenzollen 霍漢索倫王室
Czarist Russia 沙皇時代之俄國
Pole 波蘭人
incite 激勸
Wilson 威爾遜(第一次大戰時之美國總統)
crusade 十字軍
Fascist 法西斯蒂主義者
waters 海洋

knock out 擊倒
overrun 侵略
engage 衝突
Balkans 指巴爾幹半島諸國
Greece 希臘國
deal with 應付
Italy 意大利國
imminent 迫切的；危急的
assault 攻擊
channe 海峽
blockade 封鎖
British Isles 大不列顛羣島
outlook 前途
desperate 無望的
all-out 徹底的

Lesson 24

Inside France Today

By Joseph Congress

When I left Paris on August 7, to take a breath of fresh air in the "free" zone of France, I was leaving a city entirely cut off from the rest

of the country and the world—except Germany.

Bridges were down, trains crept out of the capital over a one-way track hastily patched together by German sappers; telephone communications and cables had been snapped in thousands of places. Only German officers and troops strolled through the empty capital “politely” saluted by Paris policemen still carrying pistols. Of the millions of Parisians who had fled the German blitzkrieg on Paris, only 50 a day were trekking back—and on foot. Three-quarters of the cafes and shops and apartments had their iron shutters still down.

Two newspapers had just made their appearance: *Les Dernières Nouvelles de Paris* and a more ambitious and optimistic one, *La France au Travail*. But their two pages were devoted almost entirely to long lists of members of French families dispersed over the roads of France. And the lone announcer of the only Paris radio station trying to function talked himself hoarse reading the thousands upon thousands of names of missing children or relatives that Parisians sent him.

Goebbels’ propaganda-kultur machine hadn’t

even moved into the capital, not only because the Germans were Sieg Heiling all over the places, but also because the machine didn't have to move in. These French who had remained in Paris, like my cafe cashier, could curse the English hard enough.

The French seemed to be well on the road of Franco-German collaboration, and even eager to walk arm in arm with the "polite" and "generous" and "upright" German troops who boasted that England would be a pushover in two weeks....

I returned to Paris exactly three months later, on November 7, although the Germans were far from willing to have Americans run around both zones. When I went to the American Embassy in Vichy to ask them to help me to get back to Paris, one of the attaches said:

"Are you crazy? Don't you know that the German authorities have refused every one of our demands for any American to return to Paris? If you want to go back you'll have to use Systeme D. (It's okay if you can get away with it.)"

After getting the name of a captain of the gendarmerie from a friend of mine in the Vichy

police, in case I should be thrown off the train near the demarcation line, I took the train of the Lyon-Macon-Chalons-Paris line. The train arrived on the German side of the "frontier" (as the Germans call it) at 3:15 in the morning, and I feigned sleep, as three German officers boarded our car to check up on papers. They looked into our compartment, smiled, and one of them said: "Sie schlafen ja alle" ("They're all sleeping"). They went on without even taking the trouble to open the door. I rode into Paris without the least difficulty. The efficient German machine had been getting a little lazy on French food.

When I got out of the Gare de Lyon, the most striking thing about Paris was the faces of the Parisians. They seemed angry about something, and would hardly talk about anything—something was decidedly wrong.

In one day I found out what the trouble was, in this Paris which seemed so different from the way that I left it only three months before. Not so much because now most of the shops and apartments had their iron shutters up, but because the

Goebbels' machine of kultur-propaganda was in full blast. Now there were newspapers, radio and movies. Something must have gone hay-wire with cleverly planned-arm-in-arm Franco-German offensive against England.

My cafe cashier couldn't get angry enough against the Germans: "I've heard finally from my husband, and he is a prisoner in Germany. Those Fridolins (a term of contempt, the exact meaning of which no one seems to know) will try to starve him, and I know all about their concentration camps! I could strangle all the Boches who come in here for beer with their guttural accents and their occupation marks which aren't worth a centime! Ah, they're just as stupid as ever, those Germans. They had us in the palm of their hands when they rode into Paris, but no, they never did understand psychology. They deprived us of the right to stroll around at night, and they wouldn't let us communicate with our missing relatives and husbands in the 'other' zone or in Germany. Oh, ces imbéciles!"

On every billboard in the streets and subway

were huge posters announcing the return of the Parisians' favourite newspapers, like *Le Matin*, *Paris-Soir* and *Le Petit-Parisien*, although the only thing that was familiar was the name of the paper. Charles Dupuy, owner of *Le Petit Parisien*, had stated in Vichy that if his son should ever come out with an edition of his paper in German-controlled Paris, he would disinherit him. Which he did, but that didn't prevent the Paris edition.

But the poster that the irate Parisians most single out for attention was one announcing: "Marcel Deat in *L'Oeuvre* will soon reappear—the newspaper that will continue to tell the truth to the French." Every one of these posters I saw had already been torn and scribbled with: "Traitor! Spy! Down with Laval!" and many unprintable names.

That reminded me of a conversation I had in Vichy two weeks before with Henri Clerc, co-editor of *L'Oeuvre* with Marcel Deat. One evening I accompanied Clerc to his hotel and on the way he said to me: "I honestly feel that we are doing the right thing in accepting the German request to

republish the paper because only a complete collaboration with Germany is possible. England has not only caused our collapse, but in the future we must get together with Germany from all points of view—England will be completely out of the European picture.”

The role that Marcel Déat was to play in occupied Paris was important, for he was to become the French Goebbels. He is a close friend of Laval, and as such, he became the mouthpiece of Laval's politics voicing official (German) policies in *L'Oeuvre*.

The Parisian's morning pastime used to be his favourite newspaper, where he found snappy literary, musical and drama criticism, and short stories by modern French and English and even American writers. But now, under Déat, he got hardly a line of literature, and instead got daily editorials lambasting the British, ranting against the politicians in Vichy, and yelling for a complete overhauling of the “rotten” political régime. Even usually clever and witty cartoons about Parisians and country folk were now drawn depicting John

Bull as the enslaver of France and of humanity.

All the Paris newspapers were one complete, co-ordinated chorus, literary and political. For example, there was a daily "Who wrote this?" quiz in every newspaper. In the box on the first page, under left hand corner, where New York newspapers usually have their weather reports, there appeared a short quotation from some well known French or English writer slamming the British.

You read such things as: "England will always fight to the last Frenchman—who wrote this?" or "Perfidious Albion obtained its world power by the greedy, selfish and disgraceful use of money—who wrote this?" The author's name was given the next day on the inner page. (It usually was a writer of the 18th or 19th century.)

One day, I saw a cardboard sign stuck up over an advertisement in the Paris subway. It reads:

"To hell with Hitler! (Who wrote this:)"

HELPS TO STUDY

Joseph Congress, who worked for the United

Press in Paris in 1938 and later worked on documentary films for the French Pavilion at the World's Fair, spent four days with a French family as a refugee on the roads outside of Paris in 1941 and has lived both in the occupied and unoccupied sections of France.

VOCABULARY

- one-way track 單軌鐵道
 sapper 掘地道之工兵
 snap 斷絕
 trek back 遷回
 on foot 步行
 three-quarters 四分之三
 Les Dernières Nouvelles de Paris (French) 報紙名(其意為“巴黎最近新聞”)
 La France au Travail (French) 報紙名(其意為“工作的法國”)
 disperse 離散
 Goebbel 戈培爾(德國宣傳部長)
 propaganda-kultur machine 宣傳文化之機關
 collaboration 合作
 pushover 顛覆者
 Sieg Heiling (German) 神聖的勝利
 Vichy 維琪(即巴黎陷後法臨時國都)

- okay = all right
gendarmérie 憲兵隊
demarcation 劃定界限
Lyon-Macçon-Chalons-Paris line 里昂馬松沙龍巴
 黎線(鐵路)
compartment 房間
Gare de Lyon(French) 里昂之火車站
in full blast 大活動
Fridolin 法人新造詈罵德軍之名
Boches 德人;德兵(出自法語 caboche(愚鈍)之渾名)
mark 馬克
ces imbéciles(French) 此等笨人
subway 地道
Le Matin(French) 晨報 (Le Matin 早晨之意)
Paris-Soir(French) 巴黎晚報 (Soir 爲晚間之意)
Le Petit-Parisiens(French) 小巴黎人報 (Petit
 小也)
Charles Dupuy 人名
disinherit 剝奪承繼權
single out 挑選
Marcel Dent(French) 人名
L'Oeuvre(French) 報名(此字在法文爲事業之意)
scribble 亂寫

Javal 賴伐爾(法奸)
 Henri Clerc 人名
 editorial 社論
 lambaste 打擊
 rant 怒罵;妄言
 yell 呼喊
 overhaul 檢查;檢舉
 cartoon 諷刺畫
 quiz 謎語
 slam 打擊
 perfidious 奸詐的;無信義的
 Albion 英國之古稱(今猶用于詩)
 advertisement 廣告
 To hell with Hitler! 希特勒該死!

Lesson 25

America's Role in The Far East

By Philip J. Jaffe

China to-day is a different nation not only from what she was twenty-five years ago but from what she was two years ago. In 1914 China was a weak and dying feudal state, ruled by selfish

reactionaries and exploited by the vested interests of foreign Powers. She was in no position to resist demands from any source. Here only security lay in the inability of all the Powers concerned to agree on their respective shares of the spoils. To-day China is a united nation prepared, virtually to a man, to fight to the end for her freedom and integrity. Even without any outside aid, the powerful upsurge of a new patriotic nationalism among the Chinese people is destined to thwart Japan's attempts at subjugation. Few countries living through an extended period of crisis have shown as much unity and as few rifts as China.

Fortunately for China, she is not dependent for her existence upon export trade and therefore upon foreign exchange. It matters little to her what happens to the Chinese National dollar in the world market. Such matters are much more the concern of countries like Great Britain, the United States and even Japan. China's only problem, economically speaking, is to organize her productive capacities so that she is able to feed, clothe and shelter her civil and military population.

Even with the very limited help which China has obtained thus far, she has been able to enter, partially at least, upon the offensive stage. This is best illustrated by the recent attempts of Japan to launch a large-scale attack against South-Central China in the provinces of Hunan and Kiangsi. The Japanese retreat from their effort to capture Changsha is not only an indication of China's increasing strength from a military point of view; it is significant politically, as it will weaken the claims for support of the proposed new puppet set up under Wang Ching-wei. Japan's belated realization that it is impossible to subjugate China easily and rapidly is beginning to influence her approach to foreign Powers—particularly the United States and the U.S.S.R. Her plan to set up Wang Ching-wei as the puppet head of what Japan will call "New China" is undoubtedly part of an effort to delude the United States into believing that the war is over, that China is willing to consider peace terms, and that the United States may as well recognize the "new order in Eastern Asia." The United States must not fall for such

obviously dishonest tactics.

Traditionally the United States has been primarily concerned with the development of trade with China, rather than with the building-up of vested interests. In this our aims differ to a certain extent not only from those of Japan but from those of Great Britain and France. This difference is perhaps the reason why the Chinese people have regarded us as their best friends and most likely allies in their efforts to develop a stable, progressive economy. Until very recently, America held first place in China's trade but the American trader's dream of a prosperous and stable China, providing an ever-expanding market for American goods, was shattered in July, 1937, when Japan launched her drive to block political maturity. Japan's plans for China do not include any room for American enterprise.

In view of America's hopes, however, her policy in the Far East for the past two years has been ambiguous to say the least. While public and official sentiment has definitely favored China, we have continued to supply Japan with more than 50

per cent. of her required strategic raw materials. Our official aid to China has been confined to a single \$25,000,000 credit and the extension of the Chinese American monetary agreement permitting China to dispose of her silver in exchange for American dollars. Incidentally, some of the silver brought to the United States comes from Japanese-occupied areas and therefore serves as a direct aid to Japan rather than to China. Even the public response of the American people has not been in accord with their sympathies in the Sino-Japanese War: in over two years of warfare the total amount of Chinese relief funds, including the Red-Cross contribution, does not exceed \$1,500,000—a pitifully small sum when compared, for example, to the \$15,000,000 raised for Japanese relief following the 1923 earthquake.

In contrast to our meager aid to China, the United States has continued to furnish the bulk of Japan's essential war supplies. With the aid of American scrap iron, steel, oil, machinery, and trucks, Japan has been able to conduct a campaign which has involved the destruction of American

lives and property, the enforcement of currency and exchange restrictions, and the organization of state-controlled industrial enterprises which seriously injure American business and trading interests. American missionary and educational property has been destroyed or appropriated. An American gunboat was sunk by Japanese planes. All in all, Japan has been able to prevent Americans from living and trading peacefully in China.

The main factor which has prevented the United States from carrying out a policy more in accord with American interests and public sympathy has been the belief that any action to check Japan would be ineffective unless taken in conjunction with other powers. This argument is no longer valid, inasmuch as recent world events have placed the United States in a controlling position in relation to the Far East. It is clear that we now possess the power to cripple Japan's war machine and that Japan is too isolated and weak even to contemplate an attack upon the United States in retaliation. Realizing that the Japanese army cannot win in China without American help, Japan will make

every effort, with her new "moderate Cabinet," to placate our State Department. Premier Abe and his colleagues will undoubtedly use every pretext to convince the United States that Japan's "new order" in Asia will be good for American interests; and will save the Chinese people from a variety of concocted bugaboos.

Unlike discussions of America's relations to the European situation, which chiefly concern the best way of staying out of it, discussions of our Far Eastern policy generally center around the methods which will most effectively promote our traditional aims and interests in that area. The United States is in a position not only to increase her own political and economic interests in China but, even more important, to assist in the development of a genuine new order in Asia which will provide the peace and stability so essential to the continued prosperity of America. A first step in this direction will have been made if the abrogation of the 1911 commercial treaty with Japan is followed, next January, by a official embargo on war supplies. Japan's efforts to fool the American people by the

establishment of puppet governments, even under the leadership of such well-known men as Wang Ching-wei, must not be taken seriously. It is not in the American tradition to support traitors, especially when they are working against our own interests.

At the present writing, Europe seems on the verge of a life-and-death struggle between imperialist Powers, from which every American instinctively recoils. The battle on the neutrality question is an expression of this desire to keep out the impending catastrophe! This desire must not be allowed to confuse the Far Eastern issue, for while Europe presents a picture of imminent chaos, the Far East opens a vista for a better and more progressive civilization. The United States to-day has the opportunity to lend her weight and prestige to the support of the nation that is fighting to make that civilization a reality.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

feudal state 封建之國家

reactionaries 反動派
exploited 被剝削
vested 既得的
in no position 不能
spoils 掠奪物
virtually 實際上
to a man 盡人；每人
upsurge 驟然激起
thwart 挫敗
attempts at subjugation 征服之企圖
rifts 裂痕
export trade 出口貿易
foreign exchange 外匯
shelter 予……以居室
stage 階段
belated 過遲的
delude 欺騙
peace terms 和平條件
traditionally 自昔相沿地
primarily 第一；主要地
to a certain extent 稍稍
held first place 佔第一位
shattered 破滅

-
- drive 大舉進攻
room 餘地；機會
block political maturity 阻止政治之成熟完善
ambiguous 曖昧不明的
to say the least 從輕言之
raw materials 原料
credit 信用貸款
dispose of 出售；讓與
incidentally 意外地
in accord with 與……符合
contribution 捐款
exceed 超過
raise 籌集
earthquake 地震
meager 不足的
bulk 大部份
scrap iron 碎鐵
machinery 機器
trucks 運貨汽車
conduct a campaign 經營戰事
involve 致有；累及
enforcement of currency and exchange restrictions 貨幣及匯兌限制之實行

missionary 教會的
appropriate 佔用
all in all 完全地
ineffective 無效的
check 遏制
valid 正確的
in conjunction with 連同
inasmuch as 因為
moderate Cabinet 溫和內閣
State Department 國務院(美)
Premier Abe 阿部首相
concocted 有陰謀的
bugaboos 妖怪
center 集中
abrogation 廢除
embargo 禁止通商
on the verge of 垂臨
instinctively 自然而然
recoil 退縮
neutrality 中立
keep out 避免
confuse 混亂
issue 問題, 論點

vista 回想；想像

weight 勢力

prestige 威望

Lesson 25

China Gets Set for Victory

(From "China Today")

Recent military developments in China, ranging from the overwhelming defeat of the Japanese on the Changsha sector to numerous local operations against the invaders, fully justify the conclusion that China will emerge from this war victorious, independent and strong. Though operations have not been spectacular, the essential factor is that they fit into the Chinese strategic plan and run directly counter to the Japanese plan. It is axiomatic that only the last battle wins the war, and the Chinese military command, conscious of its historic responsibility to its people, is seeking not merely to win battles, but to win the war by a sage, thoughtful and inclusive plan of strategy.

This Chinese plan is based upon historically-

proven methods of successful wars of independence fought by weaker countries against stronger invaders. The American War of Independence, the Russian Campaign against Napoleon in 1812 and the Civil War in the U. S. S. R. against the White Guard and interventionist troops are the outstanding examples of this type of war. These are wars in which the defending armies, based upon great expanses of territory and having the support of the people, avoid pitched battles when they are desired by the enemy, concentrate in the first stage of the war in harassing the invader, bringing about a deadlock in operations in the second stage of the war, the third stage being the breaking of the deadlock by the defenders through a counter-offensive. This plan, which requires cool-headed military commanders and willing, able and patriotic soldiers, is designed to wear down the invader, to prevent the full utilization of his superior military equipment to bring to bear the superiority of the defender in knowledge and control of terrain, in ability to live off the land, to move rapidly and confidently because of popular support and resistance.

The first stage of the war in China closed approximately with the Japanese capture of Hankow. Even in this operation the Japanese were unable to bring to completion by seizing the approaches to the Hankow area to the northwest and the south, which still remain in Chinese hands. During the stage the Japanese advanced, the Chinese retired. After the fall of Hankow, the Japanese have not been able to make a single major advance. The stage of deadlock set in.

This deadlock, however, is merely relative. The Chinese have continued numerous local campaigns against the invaders, retaining and extending local initiative in line with the policy of wearing down the Japanese army to the maximum. Casualty lists issued by the Chinese, as well as the reports of nonpartisan military observers, indicate that this campaign is costing the Japanese tens of thousands of men, with no compensation in territory gained. These local operations have not been restricted to the major fronts (Hankow, Canton, Shansi), but have been employed on all the intervening fronts. In addition, the Chinese have

allotted about half of their force in the field, or more than 1,000,000 soldiers, to operations behind the Japanese front lines. These operations are conducted by mobile units of the regular Chinese army and by guerilla units, which work under the guidance and leadership of the regular army forces. The scale of their operations is rapidly increasing. Instead of units of a few score or few hundred men, entire divisions of the operations of these units are similar to those of front-line forces in local operations; they do not try to hold any position against greatly superior Japanese strength, but seek out and exploit his weaknesses. Unlike the front-line units, however, which can withdraw, if need be, into their own countryside, these factors are operating behind and surrounded by the Japanese, whom they in turn surround.

The two most important battles fought so far during this second stage of the war have been the Japanese campaigns in the Changsha sector southwest of Hankow and in southeastern Shansi Province in North China. Both campaigns were defeated; the Japanese dead before Changsha totalled about

30,000, in Shansi about half that figure. The general tactical features of the Chinese counter-attacks in both campaigns were similar. The Japanese, still taking the initiative for the major operations, assembled considerable forces of troops as well as equipment. The equipment—tanks, armored cars, field artillery—proved of little value to the Japanese, because the Chinese had destroyed all means of communication. When the initial force of the Japanese attack was exhausted, the Chinese began to attack their flanks and rear. At no time did they attempt a decisive clash with the main Japanese force. This war is seeming contradiction to the Clausewitzian axiom that it is essential to defeat the main body of the enemy, after which the secondary elements are destroyed with ease. Actually, the entire Chinese campaign to this day, for some time to come, consists in avoiding decisive engagements and preparing for this major operation by a general counter-offensive. The Chinese command is not risking the entire fate of the war upon vainglorious and premature campaigns.

Preparatory to this general counter-offensive, it may be assumed that the Chinese command will test their armies' offensive capacities by increasing its operations in local actions. Larger and larger bodies of troops will be coordinated in action to prevent the Japanese from concentrating troops for new campaigns. It should be noted here that a decided change has already occurred in the balance of forces since Japan achieved its major territorial objectives. There has been no major Japanese advance and every attempt to extend or consolidate their positions in the key areas have been frustrated by the Chinese armies. The Japanese have never been able to link Hankow to Canton by the only railroad still in Chinese hands, although the Japanese control short sections extending from the terminal cities.

Three main zones are indicated for the general counter-offensive: North China's railroads and important cities; Central China along the Yangtze Valley from Hankow to Shanghai; and Canton in South China.

In North China the importance of the Chinese

positions in Shansi Province is heightened particularly by this long-view perspective. Shansi borders directly upon Hopei Province, the keystone of the Japanese occupation in North China. The Peiping-Hankow Railway runs close to the Shansi border line, and is already frequently raided by Chinese forces. Peiping and Tientsin could face attack in addition from the northwest by way of the Chahar border zone which is not strongly held by the Japanese. Shansi (with southern Chahar) would be the main base of operations for the Chinese in North China.

In central China the elongated nature of the zone occupied by the Japanese makes it possible for the Chinese command to choose several directions of attack. It is likely that Hankow will be isolated from down-river supplies by a pincers operation against the Yangtze River positions of the Japanese below Hankow (from the Kiukiang-Nanchang sector in particular). Above the Yangtze offensive possibilities are open in the Han River sector not far from Hankow and also further north, in the Honan-Anhwei area south of the Lung-hai Rail-

way. Near Shanghai attacks could be launched in the directions of Hangchow and Nanking, converging upon Shanghai itself. The Canton front is so small that almost any offensive would reach Canton immediately.

It is no wonder that the Chinese are confident, though conscious of the hardships still facing them, while the Japanese are desperate and must operate without any general strategical plan. There is every reason to assume that the Chinese are advancing towards the final victory.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

- China gets set for victory 中國努力求勝
range from ... to ... 自……起至……
sector 扇形戰區
local operations 局部的作戰
spectacular 奇觀的
axiomatic 不言而喻的
command 指揮部
sage 精明的
inclusive 包括一切的

-
- historically-proven 歷史上已證明的
Napoleon 拿破崙一世
White Guard 俄羅斯之白衛軍(與赤俄軍作戰者)
expanse 廣大
pitched battle 對陣之戰
harass 不斷作小攻擊以困疲
deadlock 僵局
counter-offensive 反攻
cool-headed 鎮靜的
utilization 利用
military equipment 軍事裝備
bring to bear 使……發生效力
superiority 優越
terrain (作戰之)地方
ability to live off the land 不賴當地而生活之能力(指糧糈充足)
approximately 大約
bring to completion 竟其全功
approach 進路
relative 比較上的
initiative 先發制人
maximum 最大量
casualty list 軍隊傷亡表冊

-
- issue 發表
non-partisan 局外的;不附屬於任何團體的
allot 分配
function (V.) 執行職務
exploit 利用
if need be 遇必要時
in turn 輪流
tactical 戰術的
feature 特點
assemble 集合
armored car 裝甲車
flank 側面
clash 碰擊
contradiction 矛盾;抵觸
Clausewitzian axiom 德國軍事家克勞塞維茲的原理
main body (軍隊之)主力
vainglorious 虛榮的
premature 時機未成熟的
preparatory to 準備
general counter-offensive 總反攻
consolidate 鞏固
terminal cities 在鐵路終點之城市
perspective 預測;展望

keystone 要點
by way of 由;因
elongated 延長的
a pincers operation 鉗形攻勢
Han River 漢江
Lung-hai Railway 隴海鐵路
converge 集中
conscious of 自知
assume 臆斷

Lesson 27

Universities Withstand Japanese Fire in China

The Sino-Japanese war has caused a shifting of China's cultural and educational centers from the seaboard to the interior—a development which is welcomed as a long needed remedy to an abnormal and thoroughly unsatisfactory situation regarding the geographical deployment of institutions of high learning.

Japanese shells and bombs, destructive as they have been to Chinese schools in the various war

zones, have cut the Gordian Knot for the Chinese so far as concerns their long thought out plan of moving some of these high education institutions to regions where there have been few or none before. Before the war the 111 universities, independent colleges and technical schools forming the high educational seats of Chinese learning fringed the eastern seaboard leaving the huge hinterland almost bereft of cultural facilities. Twenty-five big institutions were located in Shanghai and seventeen were situated in Peiping. The Shanghai-Nanking and Peiping-Tientsin areas accounted for nearly half of the nation's educational centers. South China could boast of a substantial educational background with eight institutions, but the vast territory westward to the Tibetan border and including the provinces of Szechuan, Honan, Hupeh, and Hunan possessed only fifteen. Only two were to be found in the whole area of the north-western provinces.

Peiping, the cradle of Chinese Renaissance or the New Literature Movement led by such notables as Dr. Hu Shih and Mr. Chen Tu-shiu and home

of a few of the best colleges and universities, has fallen into the hands of the Japanese. The invaders immediately made it impossible for Chinese schools to carry on with their academic work.

This at once affected four government institutions in Peiping. The Tsing Hua University, founded with the American Boxer indemnity funds, and the National Peking University were consequently moved to Changsha, capital of Hunan and later to Kunming, capital of Yunnan, while the National Normal College and the National Peiping University, also packed up and went to Sian, which attained world notoriety in December 1936 as the scene of the detention of Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek.

As far as it is known, buildings on these four campuses are now being used by the Japanese as barracks. Yenching University (an American institution), Peiping Catholic University and the Chinese-French Colleges are the only three institutions of high learning still functioning in the Ancient Capital. This, however, does not mean

there is such a thing as academic freedom in these foreign controlled schools.

According to information from the Chinese Ministry of Education, most of their courses in political science and economics have been either dropped entirely or changed to suit the desires of Japanese militarists in Peiping. Because of the Japanese occupation, the numbers of students in these foreign-established colleges have been reduced greatly.

The destruction of Nankai University in Tientsin by Japanese troops in July 1937 is no longer news, but of general interest is the indomitable spirit of its grey-haired president Dr. Chang Po-ling, who has found a new home for Nankai in Kunning, where its faculty and students are combined with those of the Tsing Hua University and the National Peking University into the National Southwest University.

Another Tientsin institution which shared the fate of Nankai was the Peiyang Engineering College. Its campus was completely destroyed, but it has established a new one in Sian, continuing to train

technicians and engineers who are now especially needed for war-time services. (This college has later been combined with the Normal College and Peiping University into one institution, called National Northwest University).

Four Chinese universities were razed to the ground in Shanghai. First to fall was the National Tung Chi University at Woosung. Showing great vitality, this German-founded institution has also taken the road and at present it is settling down in Kunming. The Fuh Tan University, whose campus had already been turned into ashes, has set up a new home in Chungking, China's war-time capital. The Great China University, also a private institution is now located in Kweiyang. The St. John's University, Shanghai University and National Chiao Tung University were now compelled to suspend as a result of the recent Japanese occupation of the International Settlements.

Whatever pretexts the Japanese might still proffer, none can explain away the destruction of the National Central University in Nanking, which was subjected to no less than six disastrous aerial

attacks. Practically all the campus buildings were damaged.

Dr. Lu Chia-lun, its president, remarked cryptically that Japanese bombs dropped on Chinese schools are far more powerful than all anti-Japanese education and propaganda put together.

To-day, the National Central University is comparatively safe for it has settled at Chungking 1600 miles up the Yangtze, which became China's capital on the fall of Nanking.

Another Nanking institution has gone even farther inland. The University of Nanking, an American missionary college, has moved to Chengtu, capital of Szechuan province, situated 2,600 miles or more up the Yangtze.

Up in Shangtung, the National Shangtung University in Tsingtao has been moved to Wanhsien, Szechuan, while the Shangtung Christian University at Tsinan has been suspended. The Anhwei University, a provincial establishment, has likewise shifted its activities to the upper-Yangtze city of Wanhsien.

The Chung Chen Medical College in Nanchang,

Kiangsi, newly founded and dedicated to Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek has transferred its seat to Yungsin situated in the western part of Kiangsi. Over in Honan, the Tsiaotso Engineering School has also gone west to join other institutions at Sian.

In Chekiang, the National Chekiang University originally with its campus in Hangchow is now in Tswenyi, Kweichow while the Hangchow Christian College, an American institution, has also been forced to close its doors.

Then the Amoy University, only recently reorganized into a government school, has gone to Changting on the Fukien-Kiangsi border in order to avoid unnecessary damage from Japanese gunboats anchored off the island of Amoy.

Even the National Sun Yat-sen University, removed to Kunming, does not feel safe and recently returned to Kwangtung. Its present locality is Pingshek, a town near Kukiang.

Relatively safe in their new locales, authorities in these Chinese colleges and universities, while doing their best to continue their pre-war curricula have added varieties of war service work to their

teaching programmes.

The sudden transference of so many universities to distant parts of China's hinterland where seat of higher learning were almost completely absent is bound to have a far-reaching effect on China's future cultural and educational development.

In her vast interior, lies China's future and the removal of colleges and universities away from the seaboard is a step in the right direction, it generally felt by her educationalists.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

Withstand 耐；抗拒

shifting 變換

interior 內地

abnormal 畸形的

geographical deployment 地理上之公佈

institutions of high learning 高等學術機關

university 大學

destructive as they have been=though they
have been destructive.

cut the Gordian Knot 解決難題

-
- so far as concerns 關於
independent colleges 獨立學院
technical schools 專門學校
seats 中心
fringe 縷… …之邊
hinterland 內地
bereft of 被剝奪
Tibetan border 西藏邊境
Szechuan 四川(省)
cradle 發源地
Renaissance 文藝復興
notable 名人
Dr. Hu Shih 胡適博士
Chen Tu-shiu 陳獨秀
home 地點
academic work (高等的)學術工作
government institutions 政府設立之學術機關
Tsing Hwa University 清華大學
Boxer indemnity funds 庚子賠款 (即因拳匪之亂償外國戰債)
Kunming 昆明(市)
National Normal College 國立師範大學
packed up 檢點行裝

-
- National Peiping University 國立北平大學
Sian 西安(市)
notoriety 盡人皆知
scene 出事地點
detention 拘留
campus 學校之場地
barracks 兵營
Yenching University 燕京大學
Chinese-French Colleges 中法大學
Ancient Capital 古都(指北平)
Peiping Catholic University 輔仁大學(天主教創辦)
academic freedom 學術自由
Chinese Ministry of Education 中國教育部
indomitable 不屈不撓的
Nankai University 南開大學
grey-haired 白髮的
president 校長(指大學校長)
Chang Po-ling 張伯苓
faculty 教職員(全體)
technicians 專門技術家
National Southwest University 國立西南聯合大學
Woosung 吳淞
share the fate of Nankai 與南開大學同其命運

vitality 生氣；生機
Peiyang Engineering College 北洋工學院
German-founded 德國人建立的
National Tung Chi University 國立同濟大學
settle down 卜居
were razed to the ground 完全被毀
to be subjected to 遭受
Fuh Tan University 復旦大學
The Great China University 大夏大學
take the road 道途
aerial attacks 空襲
St. John's University 聖約翰大學
Shanghai University 滬江大學
National Chiao Tung University 國立交通大學
Lu Chia-lun 羅家倫
National Central University 國立中央大學
cryptically 玄妙地；神祕地
The University of Nanking 金陵大學
Chengt'u 成都市
National Shangtung University 國立山東大學
Wanhsien 萬縣(四川)
Shangtung Christian University 齊魯大學(基督
教辦)

-
- Tsinan 濟南(市)
Anhwei University 安徽大學
Nanchang 南昌(市)
Kiangsi 江西(省)
Chung Chen Medical College 中正醫學院
Chekiang 浙江(省)
Tsiats'o Engineering School 焦作工程專門學校
Amoy University 廈門大學
National Chekiang University 國立浙江大學
Changting 長汀(縣)
Hangchow Christian College 之江學院(杭州基督
教立)
Fukien 福建 省)
anchored off 離……而停泊
National Sun Yat-sen University 國立中山大學
Kwangtung 廣東(省)
pre-war 戰前的
curricula 課程
transference 遷移
bound 必定的
far-reaching 遠及的

Lesson 28

In Oppressed "Manchukuo"

"The earth may turn into baked sand, and my life may be sacrificed for my country; but China's soil should ever be free from alien domination."

That is but one of the many patriotic folk-songs in Manchuria to-day. Although China's prosperous Northeastern Provinces have been under Japanese occupation for the past six years, Japan has not found it a profitable undertaking. The 32,000,000 loyal Chinese, led by an organized force of 100,000 volunteers have not lived up to the expectations of the Japanese militarists. In other words, they have not accorded the invaders that kind of hospitality which the Young Marshal's troops did in the midnight of September 18, 1931.

Propaganda notwithstanding, it is no longer a secret that "Manchukuo" has so far failed to fulfill the promises of the Japanese war-lords who had predicated that its conquest by Nippon would result in its transformation into a land flowing with milk

and honey. There are many factors responsible for the failure of Japanese colonization scheme in this so-called Land of Promise but the fact that it has been continuously harassed by Chinese "bandits" who evidently cannot be made to realize the true significance and purpose of Japanese's "heaven-ordained mission" must be an important one. The freebooting activities of the patriotic marauders have necessitated the stationing throughout the country of garrison forces far in excess of the number originally intended. The heavy financial expenditure resulting from the maintenance of several extra divisions of troops on the Asiatic mainland has helped still further to reduce the potential profits from the problematic "Paradise."

The Northeast Volunteer Corps, in their six bitter years of resistance against the aggressor, have written a stirring page in modern world history. Many of their comrades have died, others have disappeared, but fearlessly and undauntedly they strive to carry on their sacred mission of driving the Japanese from Chinese soil.

When Japanese troops "knocked" at the gate of Mukden on Sept., 18, 1931, with resounding heavy guns, General Chang Hsueh-liang gave only a slight resistance, the consequences of which meant the loss of 460,000 square miles of China's territory. But there was a heroic figure in that fateful period. He was the famous General Ma Chan-shan, then entrusted with the duty of defending Heilungkian, one of the three Manchurian Provinces. In recognition of his great and loyal service to the country in resisting the Japanese invaders, he was soon appointed Chairman of the Heilunkiang Provincial Government. Following the capture of Tsitsihar, provincial capital, on November 18, 1931, by Japanese troops, he and his Government moved to Hailun in North Heilunkiang where he made his new base of operations against the Japanese.

While he was thus entrenched in Hailun, General Ma was daily overwhelmed with furious offensives by the Japanese, but could not be dislodged. There he organized the populace for military training and armed drill. His strength

was greatly reinforced by the defection of many "Manchukuo" troops which also came under his protective wing. In the spring of 1932, his Anti-Japan-Manchukuo Volunteer Corps was hailed and supported by thousands in the Manchurian forests and Mongol plains who were converted into a new "army of the people."

Failing to subjugate his indomitable spirit by force, the Japanese resorted to the subtle methods of persuasion and bribery. In order to learn the secrets of the Japanese intrigues and designs, General Ma permitted himself to be influenced by the Japanese persuasions and gracefully joined the ranks of the invaders. He participated in the establishment of the Japanese puppet-"Manchukuo" and accepted the post of Minister of war in Cabinet, but carefully preserved his hold on Heilungkiang.

After obtaining a huge sum from the Japanese and a large quantity of arms and ammunitions, he swiftly but ingeniously carried out a coup d'état in Tsitsihar. Openly departing from the provincial capital on a pretended inspection tour, he went straight to Hailun where he effected a speedy

reorganization of his troops and declared his opposition to the "Manchukuo" and its Japanese captors at the very moment when the Lytton Inquiry Commission of the League of Nations entered Manchuria to conduct its investigation. He resumed his campaign against the Japanese and fought many bloody battles. Time and again, he was reported killed in action by the Japanese military, but these reports belied themselves by his continuous resistance. When the Japanese Army launched its general offensive against General Su Ping Wen's army—General Su was former Commander of the Chinese Eastern Railway Defense Army—in Hailar region, in September 1932, General Ma joined forces with General Su and put up a valiant but futile resistance against the Japanese onslaught.

Although General Ma and his Volunteer Corps have as yet not been able to drive the aggressors out of their beloved Manchuria, they have contributed considerably to awakening the masses for a united front. On March 1, 1934, when Henry Pu Yi was enthroned in the bogus regime of

“Manchukuo,” the farmers, forming about 90 per cent of the whole populace, were mercilessly treated by their puppet ruler. Taxes were raised to an all-time record. Land, which was their second life, was freely taken over by the “state” without any compensation. The cost of living rose to an uncontrollable level. Means of educating the public were Nipponized. Atrocities and lawlessness daily appeared. Such abuses and such miseries gave the 32 million persecuted Chinese a new incentive to organize and to fight their common oppressor.

Thus the Northeastern Chinese Volunteer Corps were strengthened with a fresh army of dis-satisfied farmers, soldiers, workers, students, shopkeepers. Now and then they conducted guerrilla warfare. They destroyed numerous communication systems, and they killed several thousands of Japanese and “Manchukuoan” soldiers. Availing themselves of the new favorable situation the volunteers formed the Northeast People’s Anti-Japanese Association in June, 1934. At the same time, the Northeast People’s Revolutionary Army was also organized.

In August, 1935, the Northeast Anti-Japanese United Army, consisted of eight route armies and five anti-Japanese mobile units, was born. The spring of 1936 saw the representatives of the Northeast People's Anti-Japanese Association going into every village and every town for reorganizing different volunteer corps. They came under the control of the Anti-Japanese United Army, consisting of a formidable force of 100,000 men in eight route armies. Under their brilliant banner to-day one may find that Manchurians, Koreans, Mongols, Russians and even Japanese, have all composed their differences into one common objective—that of standing by the Chinese nation till the time is ripe for them to strike as one man at the invaders of China's sacred soil.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

folk-songs 民歌

a profitable undertaking 有利之企業

lived up to 遵照……而實行

expectations 期望

-
- accord 給
hospitality 寬容
Young Marshal 指張學良
notwithstanding 縱使
“Manchukuo” (所謂之)滿洲國
so far 到現在
predict 預言
failed to fulfill the promises of 不能滿足……之希望
a land flowing with milk and honey 富庶之地
Land of Promise 福地
colonization scheme 殖民計劃
“heaven-ordained mission” “天定之使命”
freebooting 劫掠
patriotic marauders 愛國強盜(指東北義勇軍)
far in excess of the number originally intended
遠超原來擬定之數目
stationing 駐紮
expenditure 支出;費用
extra 額外的
divisions 師團
Asiatic mainland 亞洲大陸
reduce 減少

- potential 可能的
problematic "Paradise" 未釐定的樂園;有問題的
樂園
Northeast Volunteer Corps 東北義勇軍
stirring 鼓舞人心的
comrade 同志
undauntedly 無畏地
strive 努力
sacred 神聖的
Mukden 瀋陽
resounding 轟轟作響的
heavy guns 重砲
General Chang Hsueh-liang 張學良將軍
a heroic figure 英勇之人物
fateful 生死存亡的
Ma Chan-shan 馬占山
then 當時
entrusted with 被付託以……
Heilungkiang 黑龍江(省)
In recognition of 獎酬;承認
appoint 任命
Tsitsihar 齊齊哈爾(黑)
Hailun 海倫(黑)

-
- base of operations 作戰基地
entrench 圍以壕溝壁壘
dislodge 逐出
populace 民衆
defection 反正;背叛
hail 歡呼以迎
converted into 變爲
subjugate 征服
resort to 採取;依賴
subtle 狡猾的
persuasion 勸誘
bribery 行賄
intrigues 陰謀
gracefully 慇懃地
participate 參加
Minister of War 陸軍部長
Cabinet 內閣
a huge sum 鉅額
ingeniously 機敏地
coup d'état 政變
pretended inspection tour 假裝的視察旅行
straight 立即
effect 實行

- speedy 迅速的
reorganization 改組
Lytton Inquiry Commission of the League of Nations 國際聯盟李頓調查團
bloody battles 血戰
time and again 屢次
in action 臨陣
general offensive 總攻
Su Ping Wen 蘇炳文
onslaught 進攻
Commander of the Chinese Eastern Railway Defense Army 中東鐵路護路軍司令
Hailar 海拉爾(即呼倫)
put up a valiant but futile resistance 作勇敢之抵抗終屬無效
as yet 尙; 猶
the masses 民衆
enthrone 使卽帝位
Henry Pu Yi 亨利溥儀
all-time record 向所未有之紀錄
compensation 補償
cost of living 生活費
uncontrollable 不可抑制的

- Nipponized 日本化
 abuse 虐待
 persecuted 被迫害的
 incentive 刺激物
 common 共同的
 availing themselves of 利用
 Northeast People's Anti-Japanese Association
 東北人民反日協會
 route 路
 formidable 不可輕視的
 banner 旗幟
 Manchurians 滿洲人
 Koreans 高麗人
 Mongols 蒙古人
 Russians 俄羅斯人
 standing by 爲……出力;援助

Lesson 29

The Lesson of France

By John-Gunther

The French built the Maginot Line in the year 1930 and then condemed themselves to a policy of

defensive warfare. Having no aggressive war aims or expansionist desires of their own and strongly determined never again to suffer such havoc as had been visited upon them in the First World War, they entrenched themselves behind the Maginot Line as the Chinese had once done behind their Great Wall.

French military leaders knew that the Maginot Line could presumably withstand any direct frontal attack. But they never dreamed that it could be outflanked and thus made useless.

They sat comfortably behind the line, taking assurance from the fact that the Germans, too, had built a massive western line, and thinking that neither side could or would attack.

In this way the French lost something vital to success in war, the offensive spirit. And they completely failed to realize, as Paul Reynaud pointed out in his first tragic message to the French people when the German advance began, that they faced a totally new conception of warfare. They faced a war of mobility and maneuver in which the Germans used new weapons and a new

martial technique effect.

French soldiers made a brave effort to patch up their defenses but they were condemned to failure by their second cardinal mistake—failure to extend Maginot line from the Belgium frontier to the sea. In 1936 King Leopold withdrew from the French alliance and neglected his defenses. It seems evident now that the French were thus exposed to encirclement. But, because of political inertia, complacency, the habit of thrift and an utterly inaccurate appreciation of German ruthlessness and German talent, the French folded their hands and did nothing. They hoped—how pitiable it sounds now!—to be able to fight a “cheap” war.

The dangerous horizon facing France and the realities of twentieth-century warfare were perceived by only a few of her leaders. In 1935 Col. Charles de Gaulle, who is now head of the French National Committee in London, wrote a brochure in which he urged the mechanization of the French army, the formation of panzer divisions such as Hitler later used, and a vitalizing increase in the French

air force. For his pains, de Gaulle was dismissed from the general staff. He wanted a small, tough, extremely mobile professional army. The French general staff didn't. De Gaulle went out. And—five years later—the Germans came in.

Most important military lesson taught by Hitler in his swift victory over France is that men cannot fight against machines unless they are equipped with machines. The French were critically outnumbered in airplanes, armored cars and trucks, tanks, and anti tank guns. They were completely deficient in armed motorcyclists who proved an important weapon in the blitzkrieg. The Germans proved—to date, at least—that hearts are not as important in modern warfare as carburetors, that skin and flesh and lungs do not count as much as parachutes, flame throwers, caterpillar tractors, dive bombers and other mechanisms of twentieth-century war.

Infantry numbers bear an absurdly disproportionate relation to the outcome of battle. The French had at least three million men under arms and most of them were put into acute action against the Germans at some time during the battle. Yet,

the German panzer divisions which smashed through them with apparent ease numbered hardly two hundred thousand men.

Thus, the lesson for us is obvious. Armies without mechanization and motorization quickly become defeated armies.

Second lesson of the war is the importance of supply. Even a mechanized army will fail unless its supply of essential materials is steady, copious and efficient. Fully adequate supply, it seems, can be assured only by complete co-ordination; of national effort. The Germans possessed this co-ordination; the French did not. The British, having lost practically all their heavy military equipment in Flanders, are now working with might and main to overcome supply deficiencies.

The need of caring for civilian refugees is the third lesson taught by Hitler's blitzkrieg. Swarms of panic-stricken women and children blocked the roads in Flanders, disrupted communications and frustrated any possibility of counter-attack. In Belgium and France, Nazi agents and fifth columnists provoked the refugee exodus—when

parachutists and dive bombers had not sufficiently frightened the people—by spreading false rumors that the German infantry was coming. Realizing the seriousness of this problem, the British, preparing for invasion, completely evacuated their coastal territory.

Political disunity contributed manifestly to the French defeat. France was a democracy but her democracy was progressively corrupted and debased by inefficiency, partisans, cumbersome technique, sabotage and propaganda. The political Parties lost vitality through disunity, and wide coalitions—veering either to right or left—sought to govern the country.

For two years from 1936 to 1938 the Front Populaire, a leftist coalition, held power. Its social aims were admirable, but it was shockingly inept in administration, and the Right constantly sabotaged it. The Front Populaire tried to initiate a great arms program; at the same time it lowered working hours and raised wages. It couldn't find enough money.

Here, too, France teaches us a lesson: complete

full dress rearmament demands sacrifices from everybody. You can't effectively arm a nation which is operating under the capitalist system if at the same time you act to weaken the capitalist structure upon which you are depending for economic support.

The Front Populaire government was succeeded by a Daladier coalition dominated in large part by a policy of elaborate and extreme caution.

France under Daladier was frightened of the very shadow of its shadow. In the government were defeatists like the celebratedly timid foreign minister Georges Bonnet, often accused of Fascist sympathies. Not in the Government but hovering just outside were rank "appeasers" like Flandin who congratulated Hitler after Munich, and Laval, friend of Mussolini.

Daladier was caught between the extreme Right and the extreme Left. Convinced that even conquest by Hitler was preferable to a socialist "revolution" under Leon Blum, the Rightists wished to placate Hitler, little realizing that Hitler is much more a socialist than Blum ever was. And

the Leftists took a strong anti-Fascist line, urging opposition to Hitler until the Russo-German pact of August, 1939:

Between these two fires, Daladier equivocated, expostulated and gradually turned to the Right. He was forced to appease Hitler, first because his armament was pitifully inadequate, second because he became a prisoner of Hitler's French friends.

Meantime the catastrophe of Munich had occurred. This perhaps unavoidable disaster produced the final collapse of French political morale. The Daladier government (taking its lead from the British government of Mr. Chamberlain, of course) repudiated the French pledges to Czechoslovakia, succumbed ignominiously to German and Italian demands, surrendered Europe east of the Rhine to Hitler, thus sealing the fate of France, and actually seemed pleased with what it had done into the bargain!

Yet this is the crucial point of the whole grisly story—the Munich surrender was wildly acclaimed in France by the rank and file of solid middle-class citizens. It was greeted not as the

tremendous defeat; it was but almost as a victory. Later on there was grumbling as facts became evident but when Daladier returned he was received as a conqueror.

In welcoming Munich the solid and sober citizens who made up the middle class of the new dead French Republic revealed the weakness of morale which later contributed to their defeat. Hating and fearing war after their terrible experience of 1914-18, they were willing to accept any compromise which seemed to assure their precious "security."

They saw Czechslovakia thrown to the wolves and they hardly murmured, so that they themselves would not have to enter the arena. But what happened was that, two short years later, they found themselves in the arena with the wolves stronger and hungrier and the eastern gates locked. The French wanted peace—at any cost. This attitude proved to be the bad preparation for war.

The German fed like locusts on the ripe harvest of political and moral confusion which permeated France. Their propaganda stimulated defeatism

where it already existed, and sought to provoke it where it did not exist. With every device of propaganda, fifth columnism, espionage, the Germans played across soil—and soil of France, planting it with everything from latent dissatisfaction to active treachery. Aided by Pre-Fascists in France, the Germans for years waged a definite warfare against French morale, a psychological warfare that took a tremendous toll. Hitler did everything against France that he told us he would do. But no one ever believes Hitler until it is too late.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

Maginot Line 馬其諾防線
 defensive warfare 防禦戰
 havoc 蹂躪
 Great Wall 長城
 presumably 大概；可假定地
 frontal attack 正面攻擊
 outflank 攻擊側面
 offensive spirit 攻擊精神

-
- Paul Reynaud 雷諾(戰時法國內閣總理)
conception 觀念
war of mobility and maneuver 機動戰
martial technique 軍事技術
patch up their defenses 急速造成其防禦線
cardinal mistake 主要的錯誤
Belgian frontier 比利時邊界
King Leopold 比利時國王
exposed to encirclement 陷於包圍之勢
inertia 無生氣
complacency 自滿
utterly inaccurate appreciation 完全不正確之估價
ruthlessness 殘忍
fold their hands 袖手
sound 似乎
perceive 覺察
Col. (= Colonel) Charles de Gaulle 戴高樂上校
head 領袖
French national committee in London 倫敦法國
民族委員會
brochure 小冊
mechanization 機械化
panzer division 摩托化師團

- vitalizing 與以活力的
for his pains 他爲了這番苦心
general staff 參謀總部
critically 危險地
outnumber 數目勝過
truck 卡車；運貨汽車
tank 坦克車
anti-tank gun 防坦克砲
armed motorcycle 機器腳踏車部隊
blitzkrieg 閃擊戰(德文)
hearts 精神
carburetor 炭化器(武器之一種)
parachute 飛機降落傘
flame thrower 火燄投擲器
caterpillar tractors 鐵甲車之一種
dive bomber 俯衝轟炸機
infantry 步兵
absurdly 背理地
disproportionate 不相稱的
outcome 結果
men under arms 武裝士兵
put into action 參加戰鬥
with apparent ease 顯然容易地

- motorization 摩托化
hardly 僅；未必
copious 豐富的
co-ordination 調和
national effort 舉國之努力
Flanders 佛蘭德(地名)，德國大敗英法聯軍之處
swarm 羣
panic-stricken 驚惶的
block 阻塞
disrupt 分裂
frustrate 阻撓；破壞
Nazi agent 納粹密探
fifth columnist 第五縱隊隊員
provoke 引起；煽動
refugee exodus 難民出境
parachutist 降落傘部隊
evacuate their coastal territory 使彼等海岸地域
人民撤退
political disunity 政治上之不統一
contribute to 促成
progressively 累進地
debase 減低價值；變劣
partisan 有黨派心者

- cumbersome 難運用的
sabotage 怠工破壞
veering either to right or left 或右傾或左傾
Front Populaire 人民陣線
leftist coalition 極左之聯盟
held power 掌握政權
shockingly 極；甚：
inept 不合理的
administration 行政
initiate 着手
arms program 擴軍計劃
lower working hours and raise wages 減少工作
時數增加工資
full dress rearmament 全盤整軍
capitalist system 資本主義制度
Daladier coalition 達拉第聯合政府
in large part 在大體上
was frightened of the very shadow of its
shadow 處杯弓蛇影之境
defeatist 失敗主義者
celebratedly timid 著名膽怯的
foreign minister 外交部長
Georges Bonnet 喬治龐萊(外交部長名)

accused of Fascist sympathies 因對法西斯同情而
被責

hover 徘徊

rank appeasers 極端媚敵者

Flandin 人名，法國以前政治要人

Munich 爲德國大城市之一；指在慕尼黑犧牲捷克之
會議

Laval 賴伐爾，現任法國總理

Mussolini 墨索里尼(意獨裁者)

Leon Blum 里昂白倫，法社會黨黨魁，前法國人民
陣線內閣之總理

Leftist 左傾者；左派

Russo-German Pact 蘇德協約

two fires 指左右兩派勢力

equivocate (態度)曖昧

expostulate 抗議

turn to the Right 右傾

catastrophe 不幸之結果

taking its lead from 唯……馬首是瞻

repudiate 抵賴；否認

pledge 保證

succumb 屈服

Rhine 萊茵河

- grisly 可怕的
 middle-class 中等社會；中產階級
 grumble 鳴不平
 solid and sober citizen 有資產而且頭腦清醒的國民
 compromise 妥協
 murmur 出怨言；鳴不平
 arena 戰場
 eastern gates locked 東方之門已鎖（指失却東歐國家之援助）
 at any cost 不惜任何代價
 locust 蝗蟲
 device 策略
 Pre-Fascist 法國此次未屈降以前傾向法西斯主義之政客

Lesson 30

China's Foreign Relations during the Present Hostilities

By Wang Chung-hui

Eleven days before the outbreak of the Marco Polo Incident of July 7, 1937, which Japan instigated as an excuse to carry out a large-scale armed

invasion of China, I gave the following views to a group of Japanese newspapermen:

“China’s diplomatic policy has always been consistent. It aims at self-existence and co-existence It is important to harmonize the friendship between the two peoples; but such a task should not rest only on the shoulders of one party If any foreign country has any designs on China, the Chinese people are determined to resist I hope Japan will respect China’s territorial integrity and political sovereignty and will seek to readjust Sino-Japanese relations through diplomatic channels and in accordance with the spirit of reciprocity and equality I hope the Japanese people will have a clear prospective of new China. I further hope that they will understand the real reason behind Sino-Japanese friction in recent years. I also hope that the Japanese press will refrain from publishing any editorials which may incite the feelings of both peoples. Instead, I hope that the Japanese newspapers will constantly create a friendly atmosphere. If this can be done I am sure that the work of the diplomatic authori-

ties in readjusting Sino-Japanese relations will be greatly simplified."

It is quite evident that Japan launched the undeclared war in the hope of stopping China's rapid progress in every line of activities which is the result of conscientious organized planning on the National Government. So on the evening of July 7, 1937, on the pretext of searching for one of their missing men during a night maneuver which they illegally conducted at the Marco Polo Bridge, Japanese troops demanded the right to enter the city of Wanping, and upon being refused, opened fire with their artillery, thus precipitating a conflict which the Japanese militarists thought would in a few months bring China "to her knees so that she may no longer have the spirit to fight" but which has instead made Japan sink in a quagmire from which she is unable to find a way out.

At the very beginning of the incident the Chinese Government exhausted every effort to bring about an amicable settlement of the incident through regular diplomatic channels, and I proposed on July 12, five days after the outbreak, the

mutual cessation of military movements and withdrawal of troops of both sides to their original positions, and this proposal was reiterated on July 19, 1937, with the offer that the Chinese Government was prepared to accept "any pacific means recognized by international law and treaties, such as direct negotiations, good offices, mediation or arbitration." All these demarches, however, failed to elicit any response from Japan, who was bent on aggression.

The Japanese forces continued their attacks on our positions at Lukouchiao (or the Marco Polo Bridge), and carried their hostile operations to Tientsin and Peiping. On the evening of August 9th, 1937, a Japanese officer accompanied by a seaman precipitated the second Shanghai Incident by trying to force an entry into our military aerodrome at Hungjao without the slightest pretext and in the exchange of shots with the Chinese sentries they were killed on the spot. As a measure of reprisal, Japanese forces launched an attack on the Shanghai Civic Centre.

China, therefore, had no other alternative but

defend herself against the invasion of her territory by her aggressive neighbour, and made her attitude clear in a statement issued on the day following the outbreak at Shanghai to the effect that "China's territorial integrity and sovereign rights have been wantonly violated by Japan in glaring violation of such peace instruments as the Covenant of the League of Nations, the Nine-Power Treaty and the Pact of Paris. China is in duty bound to defend her territory and her national existence, as well as the sanctity of the above-mentioned treaties. We will never surrender any part of our territory. When confronted with aggression, we cannot but exercise our natural right of self-defence. In our supreme fight not only for a national but for a world cause, not only for the preservation of our own territory and sovereignty but for the maintenance of international justice, we are all confident that all friendly nations, while showing sympathy with us, will be conscious of their obligations under the international treaties to which they have solemnly subscribed."

That from the very beginning of the conflict

the peace-loving nations recognized the justice and international significance of China's fight for national existence is testified by the condemnation of Japan's lawless actions on September 28, 1937, followed by the adoption of a resolution on October 6, 1937, whereby the League of Nations Assembly "expresses its moral support for China, and recommends that Members of the League should refrain from taking any action which might have the effect of weakening China's power of resistance and thus of increasing her difficulties in the present conflict, and should also consider how far they can individually extend aid to China."

The Nine-Power Treaty Conference at Brussels which was not attended by Japan on the ground that her violation of international agreements "is a measure of self-defence," reaffirmed the pledge made by the signatories of the Nine-Power Treaty "to respect the sovereignty, the independence, and the territorial and administrative integrity of China," and pointed out in its declaration of November 24, 1937, that whenever armed force is employed in disregard of certain self-denying rules

in the conduct of nations with each other, "the whole structure of international relations based upon the safeguards provided by treaties is disturbed." The efforts of the Conference "to secure the co-operation of the Japanese Government in the hope of arresting of hostilities and bringing about a settlement," however, brought no results. The Conference, therefore, temporarily suspended its sittings with the provision that it will be called together again "whenever its chairman or any two of its Members shall have reported that they considered that its deliberations can be advantageously resumed."

The League Council continued to pass resolutions in support of China's life-and-death struggle on February 2nd, 1938, on May 14th, 1938, and on September 29th, 1938. In the report of September 30th, 1938, the Members of the League of Nations were called upon "to adopt individually the measures provided for in Article XIV of the Covenant" which provides for the severance of all trade and financial relations and the prohibition of commercial and personal intercourse between the

aggressor and the nationals of all other states, whether of the League or not.

Although the League reaffirmed the Recommendation to its Members regarding the individual application of Articles XVI and XVII in the Resolutions of January 20th, 1939 and May 27th, 1939, it is the obligation as well as duty of Members of the League of Nations, in the interests of international justice, to find more effective measures to collectively as individually enforce the application of sanctions and reprisals.

I must, however, say that the pledge to provide China with individual assistance in her struggle against her ruthless invader, is well appreciated by the Chinese Government and people. The loan extended so generously by the Governments of the United States, Great Britain and other countries demonstrate that the peace-loving nations of the world are with us in our war of resistance against Japanese aggression.

The string of recent aggravations upon the rights and interests of third Powers in China, such as the landing of Japanese marines on the

Kulangsu International Settlement, the demands on the Shanghai International Settlement and the blockading of the Tientsin foreign concessions provide concrete proof that Japan, in carrying out her so-called "New Order in East Asia", is bent on driving out all the vested interests of the Powers from this continent, so as to permit her to monopolize the commerce and resources of this country for the purpose of building up a base of operations for the long-cherished dream of the Japanese militarists to conquer the world. Japan has now gone so far in her policy of eliminating from Asia existing European and American influence that the Powers now have no middle course open to them.

If the Powers are to maintain the present balance of power in the Pacific and prevent their own rights and interests from being entirely driven out of this continent by an aggressor which cannot be satisfied there is no other alternative except to terminate all financial relations and completely stop commercial intercourse of every description with Japan.

In the meantime, China, who has been carrying

on her struggle against the aggressor for the last two years in the face of great difficulties and will continue to do so indefinitely, has been defending not only her own territorial integrity but also the very principles upon which the security of civilization hinges. Therefore, any assistance rendered by the Powers to China to overthrow Japanese militarism will help to stabilize conditions in the Far East and restore permanent peace in the Pacific which cannot but have far-reaching beneficial effects in other parts of the world.

HELPS TO STUDY

The above is an article written by Dr. Wang Chung-hui, Minister for Foreign Affairs of China to commemorate the second anniversary of the Sino-Japanese undeclared war.

VOCABULARY

Marco Polo Incident 即蘆溝橋事變, 因蘆溝橋亦名

Marco Polo Bridge.

instigate 鼓動; 慫恿

excuse 口實; 託辭

carry out 實行

-
- large-scale 大規模的
armed invasion 武裝侵略
newspapermen 新聞記者
diplomatic policy 外交政策
consistent 一致的
self-existence 自存
co-existence 共存
harmonize 使融和
between the two peoples 在兩民族之間
rest upon 置於……之上
one party 一方
design 陰謀
territorial integrity 領土之完整
sovereignty 主權
readjust 調整
Sino-Japanese relations 中日關係
through diplomatic channels 經外交之途徑
in accordance with 依照
reciprocity 互惠主義
prospective 前瞻
friction 摩擦
Japanese press 日本報紙
refrain from 避免

-
- editorial 社論
incite 刺激
create a friendly atmosphere 造成友好之空氣
conscientious 謹慎的
National Government 國民政府
on the pretext of 以……為藉口
maneuver 演習
illegally 違犯地
Marco Polo Bridge 蘆溝橋
Wanping 宛平(縣)
artillery 砲兵
precipitate 促成
no longer 不再
bring China to her knees 使中國屈膝
quagmire 泥沼
to find a way out 覓一出路
an amicable settlement 和平解決
propose 提議
mutual 雙方的
cessation 停止
peaceful means 和平的方法
negotiation 談判
good offices 調停

- mediation 斡旋
 arbitration 仲裁
 demarche (政治上之)步驟;行動(外交用語)
 elicit 誘出
 to be bent on 執意
 Lukouchiao 蘆溝橋
 seaman 水兵
 force an entry into 強行進入
 aerodrome 飛機場
 Hungjao 虹橋(上海)
 sentry 哨兵
 on the spot 當場
 reprisal 報復
 Shanghai Civic Centre 上海市中心區
 had no other alternative but 除...別無他法
 made her attitude clear 表明其態度
 to the effect that 大意謂...
 glaring 明目張膽的
 Covenant of the League of Nations 國際聯盟
 盟約
 Nine-Power Treaty 九國公約
 Pact of Paris 巴黎和約
 bound 應當的

- sanctity 神聖不可侵犯
confront with 遭遇
cause 主張;主義
preservation 保持
obligation 責任
solemnly 鄭重地
subscribe 簽訂
testify 證明
condemnation 譴責
lawless 不法的
the League of Nations Assembly 國際聯盟議事會
moral support 道德上之支持
recommend 勸
Members 會員國
individually extend aid 個別地擴大援助
Brussels 不魯捨爾(比利時國京城)
on the ground that... 以……為理由
international agreement 國際協定
a measure of self-defence 自衛之手段
reaffirm the pledge 重申保證
signatory 訂盟國
administrative integrity 行政完整
in disregard of 不顧;蔑視

- self-denying rules 自制之定則
cooperation 合作
arresting hostilities 阻止戰爭
suspend its sittings 閉會
with the provision that... 準備
deliberation 討論
advantageously 有益地
resume 再作
League Council 國際聯盟行政會
pass resolutions in support of China 通過議決案
以援助中國
life-and-death struggle 生死關頭之鬥爭
Article XVI of the Covenant 盟約第十六條
severance 斷絕
prohibition 禁止
national(N.) 國民
collectively as well as individually enforce 集體
及個別地實行
sanction 制裁
ruthless 殘忍的
appreciate 感佩
loan 借款
demonstrate 表明

- string 一連
aggravation 觸犯
landing 登陸
marine 海軍
Kulang-su International Settlement 鼓浪嶼公共租界
Shanghai International Settlement 上海公共租界
blockade 封鎖
concession 租界
so-called 所謂的
vested 既得的
this continent 指亞洲
monopolize 獨佔
resources 資源
hinge 以爲轉移
stabilize 使穩定
cannot but 必然

Lesson 31

Hitler : Strategist

By Captain Liddell Hart

In Rauschnig's account of a discussion on the

subject, Hitler Speaks, he declared: "How to achieve the moral breakdown of the enemy before the war has started—that is the problem that interests me. Whoever has experienced war at the front want to refrain from all avoidable bloodshed."

The extent to which Hitler has given a new direction and wider meaning to the German doctrine of war may best be seen by comparing his theory and practice with that of General Ludendorff—the director of Germany's war effort in the last war, and Hitler's former associate in the abortive 1923 project to seize control of Germany by a "march on Berlin."

Ludendorff's picture of the way that the next war would be waged was merely an intensified reproduction of the offensives he had carried out in 1918 which had been brilliant in their opening, but barren in their issue. For him the offensive was still a battle-process in which the infantry would be helped forward by artillery, machine guns, motors, and tanks until it "overwhelms the enemy in a man-to-man fight." All movements should

lead to battle; mechanization would merely quicken the rush to battle. He conveyed no clear idea, and seemed to have none of the relationship between the different elements in war.

Much as there was in common between Ludendorff and Hitler in their conception of the race, the state, and the German people's right to dominate, their differences were quite as great especially in regard to method.

While Ludendorff demanded the absurdity that strategy should control policy, which is like saying the tool should decide its own task, Hitler solved that problem by combining the two functions in one person. Thus he enjoyed the same advantage as Alexander and Caesar in the ancient world or Frederick the Great and Napoleon in a later age. At the same time he had early grasped what the soldier, by his very profession, is less ready to recognize: that the military weapon is but one of the means that serve the purposes of war: one out of the assortment which the grand strategist's instrument case contains.

Instead of giving excessive emphasis to one

means, which circumstance may render ineffective, it is wiser to choose and combine whichever are most suitable, most penetrative, and most conservative of effort—i.e. which will subdue the opposing will at the lowest war cost and minimum injury to the post-war prospect. For the most decisive victory is of no value if a nation is bled white in gaining it.

The true purpose of strategy is to diminish the possibility of resistance and from this follows another axiom that to ensure attaining an objective one should have alternative objectives. For if the opponent is certain as to your point of aim he has the best possible chance of guarding it. A plan must have branches if it is to bear fruit. A plan with a single fixed aim is like a barren pole.

Whether by instinct or reflection, Hitler acquired an acute understanding of these strategic truths that few soldiers have ever perceived. He applied this psychological strategy in the political campaign by which he gained the control of Germany—exploiting the weak points of the Weimar Republic, playing on human weakness, alternatively

playing off capitalist and socialist interests against each other, appearing to turn first in one direction and then in another, so that by successive indirect steps he approached his goal.

Once his control of Germany was achieved in 1933, the same compound process was given a wider extension. Having negotiated, the next year, a ten-year-peace-pact with Poland, to cover his eastern flank; in 1935, he threw off the Versailles Treaty; and in 1935, ventured the military re-occupation of Rhineland. That same year he indefinitely began camouflaged war by supporting General Franco's bid to overthrow the Spanish Republican Government—as an indirect approach, in conjunction with Italy, against the strategic rear of France and Britain. Having thus weakened their position in the West, and having also covered himself in the West by re-fortifying the Rhineland, he was able to turn eastwards.

In March, 1938, he marched into Austria, and thus laid bare the flank of Czechoslovakia, while breaking the girdle which France had woven round Germany after the last war. In September, 1938,

Hitler secured, by the Munich Agreement, not merely the return of the Sudetenland, but the strategic paralysis of Czechoslovakia. In March, 1939, he occupied the country he had already paralysed, and thereby enveloped the flank of Poland.

This process was the modern equivalent, on a wider scale and a higher plane, of the classical art of maneuvering for position before offering battle. Throughout its course, Germany's strength had been growing, both directly by the vast development of her armaments, and indirectly by subtraction from the strength of her potential main opponents,—through lopping off their allies and loosening their strategic roots.

Thus, by the spring of 1939, Hitler had decreasing cause to fear an open fight, and at this critical moment he was helped by a false move on Britain's part—the guarantee suddenly offered to Poland and Rumania, each of them strategically isolated, without first securing any assurance from Russia, the only Power which could give them effective support. Such a blind step was the

rashest reversal of a policy of appeasement and retreat that has ever been conceived.

In such circumstances Hitler's principles of strategy obviously pointed to an immediate attempt to make a pact with Russia that would ensure her detachment. Once that was secured, Hitler was "sitting pretty." If the Allies declared war in fulfilment of their obligations, they would automatically forfeit the advantages of defense and be committed to an inherently offensive strategy—without the necessary resources and under the most unfavorable conditions.

Hitler was now able to consolidate his military gains and exploit his political advantages behind the cover of his Western defenses that the would-be rescuers of Poland were palpably incapable of firing. While many people in Britain and France were dreaming of how some of the neutral countries adjoining Germany might open a way to her flanks, Hitler was quick to exploit the same way of turning their flanks.

His amazingly easy success, sealed by the equally easy frustration of the Allies' attempted

counter-invasion of Norway, must naturally have encouraged him to attempt the other part of his original design. This was to seize the Low Countries as a base for air and submarine attack on England.

Although he had twice as many divisions as the French and British combined, and an advantage of four to one in aircraft and tanks—odds which would have justified him in attacking the strongest position—he did not attempt to penetrate the Maginot Line. Instead, by his “baited offensive” against the two small neutrals, Holland and Belgium, he managed to lure the Allies out of their defenses on the Belgian frontier. Then, when they had an advance deep into Belgium, their march being impeded by his air force, he struck in behind them with a thrust at the uncovered hunch of the French advance.

While the Allies’ commanders thought in terms of battle, the new German commanders sought to eliminate it by producing the strategic paralysis of their opponents using their tanks, dive bombers, and parachutists to spread confusion and dislocate com-

munications. The outcome cast an ironical reflection on the complacent assumption of one of the Allied chiefs that the opposing general would be handicapped by the fact that none of them had been more than captains in the 1st War.

To prepare the way for his offensive, he sought to find influential adherents in the other country who would undermine its resistance, make trouble in his interests and be ready to form a new government compliant to his aims. Bribery was unnecessary—he counted on himself—seeking ambition, authoritarian inclination, and party-spirit to provide him with willing and unwilling agents among the ruling classes.

Then, to open the way, at the close moment he aimed to use an infiltration of storm troopers who would cross the frontier while peace still prevailed, as commercial travellers or holiday makers, and don the enemy's uniform when the word came, their rôle was to sabotage communications, spread false reports and, if possible, kidnap other country's leading men. This disguised vanguards would in turn be backed up by air-borne troops.

Hitler was contemptuous of assaults and bayonet-charges, the A. B. C. of the traditional soldier. His way in warfare began a double D.: demoralisation and disorganisation. Above all, war would be waged by suggestion—by words instead of weapons, propaganda replacing the projectile.

Such was Hitler's theory of war with psychological weapons. If we are to check him we must understand it. The value of its application to the military sphere has been proved. To paralyse the enemy's military nerve system is, clearly, a quicker and better form of operation than to pound flesh. Its application to the political sphere has been proved in effect, but not in content.

He is a master of strategy, and has given the art a new development. He has also mastered, better than any of his opponents, the first stage of grand strategy—that of developing and coordinating all forms of warlike activity, and all the possible instruments which may be used to operate against the enemy's will. But he would seem, like Napoleon, to have an inadequate grasp of the higher level of grand strategy that of conducting

war with a far-sighted regard to the state of peace that will follow. To do this effectively, a man must be more than a strategist; he must be a leader and a philosopher combined.

While strategy is the very opposite of morality, as it is largely concerned with the art of deception, grand strategy tends to coincide with morality, through having always to keep in view the ultimate goal of the effort it is directing.

In trying to prove their irresistibility in attack, the Germans have weakened their own defenses in many ways—strategic, economic, and, above all, psychological. As their forces have spread Europe, bringing misery without securing peace, they have scattered the germs of resentment from which resistance to their ideas may develop. And to these germs their own troops have become more susceptible from being exposed to contact with the people of the occupied countries, and made sensitive to the feelings they inspire.

This is likely to damp the martial enthusiasm which Hitler has so assiduously stimulated, and to deepen their longing for home. The sense of

feeling friendless reinforces the effect of staleness, opening the way for the infiltration of war-weariness as well as counter-war ideas.

Here is the opportunity which could be developed by a fuller vision of grand strategy. So long as we remain invincible, that opportunity would grow. Ours is a simpler goal to attain than Hitler's. To impose his peace he needs complete victory which he cannot attain without conquering us and then has to solve the problem of holding down all the conquered peoples.

To gain the peace that we desire we have only to convince his people that he cannot gain such a victory as will give them a satisfactory peace, and that the future holds no hope until, realising the emptiness of victory, they give up such a futile pursuit.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

Rautschning 人名，本為納粹黨員，因不滿希特勒之政治，逃奔國外，著書揭破希特勒之陰謀與其政治之黑暗，其著作之重要者有：

“Hitler Speaks”, “The Revolution of Nazism.”

moral breakdown 精神上之崩潰

avoidable 可避免的

bloodshed 流血

General Ludendorff 魯登道夫將軍，爲第一次歐戰
中德國參謀總長

abortive 失敗的

project 計劃

seize control of 奪取……之統治權

march on Berlin 希特勒一九二三年率領褐衫黨起
事，圖佔柏林奪取政權，但結果失敗

barren in their issue 結果無益

mortars 汽車

man-to-man fight 短兵相接之戰爭

in common 相同

function 作用

Alexander 卽 Alexander The Great, 馬其頓王

遠征波斯埃及印度爲世界史上大軍事家之一

Caesar 卽 Caius Julius Caesar, 羅馬大將，武功

極盛，稱羅馬三雄之一

assortment 各種

giving excessive emphasis 過於著重

penetrative 敏銳的

- conservative of effort 省力的
- post-war 戰後的
- ensure 保證
- objective 目標
- to bear fruit 生效果
- instinct 本能
- exploit 利用
- weak point 弱點
- Weimar Republic 即自一九一九年至希特勒執政時
之德國，因憲法在 Weimar 城起草，故稱
- play off 利用甲以制乙
- threw off Versailles Treaty 毀棄凡爾賽和約
- reoccupation 重行佔據
- Rhineland 萊因蘭，屬德國西部
- camouflaged war 煙幕戰爭
- Austria 奧地利國
- laid bare 暴露
- Munich Agreement 慕尼黑協定，一九三八年英法
與德國締結，其目的為犧牲捷克以求與希特勒妥協
- envelop 包圍
- subtraction 減少
- lop off 斬去；除掉
- Poland 波蘭(國)

-
- Rumania 羅馬尼亞(國)
rashest reversal 最鹵莽的顛倒
forfeit 喪失
would-be rescuers 自稱的拯救者
dive bomber 俯衝轟炸機
palpably 顯然地
seal 確定；保證
Low Countries 指荷蘭，比利時，盧森堡
dislocate communications 使交通中斷
cast a reflection on 予……以譴責；加毀謗於
assumption 臆斷
adherent 依附者
undermine 暗中破壞
compliant to 順從……的
bribery 賄賂
authoritarian inclination 對於獨裁主義之傾向
party-spirit 爲黨派之心
ruling class 統治階級
infiltration 滲入
storm troopers 挺進隊
commercial traveller 商店兜生意之跑街
holiday maker 消磨假期者
don 穿

-
- word 口令
sabotage 破壞
kidnap 綁架；拐騙
disguised 化裝的
in turn 輪流
back-up 幫助
air-bourne 空中運輸的
A. B. C. 初步；階梯
traditional soldier 遵循向例之軍人
demoralisation 使士氣沮喪
disorganisation 使解體；使紊亂
above all 尤其；最要者
replace 代替
projectile 彈丸
warlike activity 軍事的活動
irresistibility 不可抵抗；難敵
germ 微菌
resentment 憤恨
susceptible to 易沾染
sensitive 有敏感的
likely 合宜的
to damp the martial enthusiasm 挫折其好戰之狂熱
to deepen their longing for home 加深其思家之

渴想

staleness 衰萎

invincible 不能征服的

hold down 壓服

futile 徒然的；無益的

Lesson 32

Dr. Sun Yat-sen

By L. T. Chen

Dr. Sun Yat-sen, founder of the Chinese Republic, and leader of the Revolution, was born of peasant parentage on November 12, 1866, in a little village near Hsiangshan, a small city in the province of Kwangtung. Here he spent an uneventful childhood attending the village school with the children of the neighborhood. At thirteen years of age he made a trip to Honolulu, where he remained for five years and completed his high school course. Here he breathed the spirit of liberty and absorbed freely the influence of American life. When he returned, therefore, to Hongkong and entered Queen's College, he was already dis-

satisfied with the political life of his beloved country. Graduating at the age of twenty, he undertook to prepare himself for the medical profession and completed his training in the Hongkong Medical College in the year 1892.

His professional practice, however, was short-lived, for he gave it up to respond to a higher call following China's defeat in the Sino-Japanese War in the year 1894. This was by no means a new enthusiasm but rather a forward step in the career which he had chosen early in his college days. Everyday he spent in Hongkong under British rule and every defeat China suffered at the hands of other countries added vigor to his conviction that the government of his own country was rotten to the core. Nothing short of a revolution would provide the remedy. He had dedicated himself to the cause, and among his fellow students he had found a few with whom he could share his deepest aspirations. The task of building up a free and enlightened China became his sole purpose in life.

From the very beginning the undertaking was

fraught with dangers. After a hasty attempt at revolt that failed, he embarked in 1895 on his life of exile. Pursued by personal danger he went first to Japan, then to America, and was finally kidnaped on the streets of London and carried off to the Chinese legation, where he was kept hidden for twelve days. Thanks to the loyalty and ingenuity of his friend Dr. James Cantlie, he escaped; and the scheme to smuggle him back to China for execution came to naught. He proceeded to Europe and spent the next few years studying the social and political institutions in the countries he visited. During this time he formulated his "Three Principles of the People" and spread his gospel of revolution among his compatriots wherever he went.

After the Boxer trouble in 1900 the cause of the revolution gained in momentum. The overthrow of the Manchu régime has become a definite program and large numbers of Chinese men and women in all the parts of the world joined in the crusade. A conference was held in Tokyo in 1905 at which two important resolutions were passed:

(1) that the Revolutionists be united under the name of Tung Meng Hui, and (2) that the reigning dynasty be deposed and China transformed into a republic. The membership of the conference included representatives from all the provinces of China and numerous persons from the ranks of Chinese merchants in other lands. The former engaged themselves in an active campaign of secret propaganda in the home land and the latter opened their purses in unstinted support of these efforts. But for the generous giving of these patriotic businessmen abroad it is improbable that the Revolution could have materialized.

The culmination of these efforts come in the autumn of 1911, when the battle cry was sounded in Wuchang. This capital of Hupeh quickly fell to the Revolutionists. Although the outbreak was precipitated by mistake before the plans were completed, the response in other parts of the country was so widespread that the Revolution was a fait accompli in less than one hundred days! The effete Manchu government was overthrown and Dr. Sun's dream of years had become a reality.

His undaunted spirit had won the day and his weary body had earned a momentary rest. He was called upon, however, to become the first president of the new Republic, and hopes ran high that a rejuvenated China would turn a new page in history.

But the events of 1911 proved to be only the beginning of a long process. Broadly speaking, two schools of thinking came to dominate the minds of young China, the one led by Yuan Shih-kai and the other by Sun Yat-sen. The former believed in military force, the latter pinned his hope on the awakening of the masses of the people. In order that he might better accomplish his purpose Dr. Sun yielded the presidency to Yuan after he had held it for only three months. He chose to devote himself to the task of educating the people to an understanding of the fundamentals of democracy and of uplifting their economic standards. The Tung Meng Hui was reorganized as a political party with a broader program under the name Kuomintang, and a nationwide plan of railroad building was undertaken as the first step towards

the industrialization of the country. But the personal ambition of Yuan Shi-kai interfered. Instead of giving himself unselfishly to the political reconstruction of the country, he saw in the situation an opportunity for self-aggrandizement. He disregarded Parliament and set out to make himself emperor. Dr. Sun realized too late that his confidence had been misplaced and that the Revolution had been smothered by treason.

This fatal mistake delayed the Revolution until 1926, when Chiang Kai-shek finally stepped into the shoes of his deceased leader and led the Nationalist forces on their victorious march from Canton toward the north. Yuan meanwhile had left a legacy of militaristic oppression under which China continues to groan.

But it would be a mistake to think that these sixteen years following the initial success of the Revolution were wasted. Dr. Sun's untiring efforts guided the people of China into a constantly growing patriotism and national consciousness. He attracted to his side many leaders and numberless patriots eager to undertake the task of carrying on the

Revolution to a finish. The more he met with reverses the stronger became his hold on his followers. Several times he set up a separate government in Canton and as often his plans were frustrated, until finally in 1923 a stable régime was established and a demonstration of efficient and effective government was made. During this period he reorganized the Kuomintang for the third time and made clear the practice of party government. He elaborated his political philosophy of the Three Principles in a series of popular lectures, sounded the clarion call with Russia. These achievements constitute the basic ideals and the policies of the Revolutionary movement. The Three Principles inspired the people with a political ideal, the denunciation of the unequal treaties released a latent force in the hearts of the people nurtured by the inarticulate desires of many years, and the alliance with Russia determined a method of procedure for the disentanglement of China's complex diplomatic problems. Sun Yat-sen was a diligent student, a far-sighted statesman, an indefatigable worker, and irrepressible optimist and,

above all, he was China's beloved leader, clear of vision and steady-fast in purpose. He not only blazed the trail in the reconstruction of new China, but he also laid down the highways leading towards the successful consummation of his ideals in the future. Out of his years of trial and travail he discovered for coming generations a sure way for the recovery of national freedom.

On March 12, 1925, when the unification of China was apparently within reach, he died in Peking. For a short while rumors were rife reporting the disintegration of the party which he had founded and had taken pains to build up. But the fact was quickly revealed that the party was stronger than ever after his death. His indestructible spirit gripped the lives of his followers even more powerfully than before. It is sometimes even suggested that his death has actually served to accelerate the progress of the Revolution.

But in the thinking of Dr. Sun the Revolution is a continuous process. This "period of military achievement" represents only its beginning and is of less importance than the "period of training"

which is to follow. Only when the training process is completed can the Revolution bring the country to the full enjoyment of democracy. In his own words uttered on his deathbed, "The Revolution is not yet completed. All my comrades must strive on!"

Dr. Sun died a comparatively poor man, leaving behind no property except a house which his adherents overseas had bought for him over ten years ago, and a library said to be one of the best on social and political sciences in existence. For forty years he toiled "in order to achieve freedom and equality for China." He is the father of new China, taking his place among the foremost leaders in history.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

to be born of peasant parentage 生於農家

Hsiangshan 香山

uneventful 無事的; 平凡的

make a trip to 旅行...

Honolulu 火奴魯魯(夏威夷羣島上之名城)

complete one's high school course 卒業於高級
中學

Hongkong 香港

medical profession 醫業

shortlived 不久的

give up 放棄

respond (v.) 響應

by no means 決不

enthusiasm 醉心

a forward step 進一步的行動

under British rule 在大不列顛帝國統治之下

conviction 深信

rotten 腐敗的

to the core 澈底

nothing short of 除……外無以

aspiration 志願

dedicate one's self to 獻身於

enlightened 文教昌明的

sole 唯一的

to be fraught with 充滿

hasty 草率的；急速進行的

a attempt at revolt 謀叛

kidnap 誘拐

-
- pursued by personal dangers 爲自身之危險所迫
legation 公使館
to be kept hidden 被幽禁
thanks to 由於;以……之賜
loyalty 忠義
ingenuity 機智
smuggle 私運
execution 處死
come to naught 失敗
proceed 往
formulate 有系統地著述
Three Principles of the People 三民主義
gospel 主義
compatriot 同國之人
Boxer trouble 拳匪之亂
gain in momentum 得勢
program 方針
crusade 十字軍, 此處指熱烈的共同行動
Tokyo 東京(日本國都)
depose 廢立
the reigning dynasty 統治之皇朝
transform into 變成
membership 全體會員

-
- campaign 運動
homeland 國內
open one's purse 解囊
unstinted 無限制的
but for 倘無
improbable 未必
materialize 成爲事實
culmination 極點;極盛
Wuchang 武昌
Hupeh 湖北
precipitate 催促
response (n.) 響應
fait accompli 既成事實
effete 衰弱的
in less than one hundred days 不到一百天
undaunted 大無畏的
win the day 戰勝
weary 疲勞的
rejuvenated 新生的;返老,童的
a momentary rest 短暫之休息
broadly speaking 廣泛言之
become the first president 爲第一任大總統
school 派別 (指思想或學術)

-
- dominate 支配
Yuan Shi-kai 袁世凱
pin one's hope on 以希望繫於
yield the presidency to 讓總統之位於
choose to 欲
unlift 提高
a political party 政黨
economic standard 經濟水準
industrialization 工業化
interfere 妨礙;干涉
reconstruction 建設
disregard 不顧
parliament 國會
self-aggrandizement 自身權勢之擴大
set out 開始
to make himself emperor 自立為帝
smother 遏抑
treason 叛國;大逆
fatal 最不幸的
delay 耽擱
step into the shoes of 代替……之職位
deceased 已故的
the Nationalist forces 國民軍

-
- legacy 遺物;遺產
militaristic oppression 軍閥之壓迫
groan 呻吟
initial 起初的
untiring efforts 不懈之努力
reverse 挫折
national consciousness 民族意識
hold 支配力
follower 黨員
practice 實施
a separate government 獨立政府
party government 黨治
elaborate 苦心作成
political philosophy 政治哲學
a series of 連續的
popular lectures 通俗演講
clarion 喇叭
with respect to 關於
conclude an alliance with 與……締結同盟
basic ideal 基本的理想
inspire 激勵
denunciation 通告廢棄
release 解放

latent 潛伏的
nurture 養育(此處借喻作鬱積之意)
inarticulate 不能言的
procedure 進行
disentanglement 解除困難
far-sighted 眼光遠大的
indefatigable 不倦的
irrepressible 不能壓服的
optimist 樂觀者
clear of vision 觀察明晰
steadfast in purpose 宗旨堅定
blaze the trail 宣示途徑
consummation 完成
apparently 似乎
trial and travail 艱難困苦
coming generations 後世
unification 統一
within reach 可得;能達到
disintegration 離析分崩
take pains 煞費心力
indestructible 不能毀滅的
grip 支配
actually 實在地

serve to 足以
 accelerate 加速
 utter 說
 period of military achievement 軍政時期
 deathbed 臨終之牀
 period of training 訓政時期
 comparatively 頗;稍
 leave behind 遺留
 adherent overseas 海外黨員
 in existence 現存
 toil 辛勤工作

Lesson 33

China's Spiritual Mobilization

By Madame Chiang Kai-shek

"The officials and people of our suffering country are being urged to rise together in their wisdom, their hurt, and their anger, to higher heights of philosophy, patriotism, unselfishness, courage, endurance, and generosity with one national aim, that out of the agonizing sufferings and losses that have been brought upon us we shall

arise as a new people.

“Our barbaric enemies have boasted that they intend to beat us to our knees and break our spirit. We shall show those enemies, as we shall show our friends, that in the blood of our fellow men and the ashes of our burned homes has flowered a new national spirit.

“We shall show them that the new China that was in the making before wars invoked to destroy it, is still marching on—wiser, more patriotic, and unafraid. We Chinese, in our long history, have survived great natural and political calamities; we have triumphed over prolonged adversity, and we have carried our culture and civilisation and our national entity safely through the ages no matter what nations rose or fell about us. What our inherent power of endurance, philosophy, and patience have enabled us to do in the past will fortify us to do in the present as well as in the future.

“What we have to do, and what we are going to do, is to carry on. By applying with intensity to purpose the principles of China's New Life

Movement we shall go far. We must develop to the fullest extent the advantages of co-operation in carrying out the responsibilities of citizenship and of mutual help in solving our social and national problems. Time has proved that we possess the stamina and the character to face prolonged trials and tribulations, and we shall not fail now.

“The New Life Movement, when it was launched, was welcomed by our people as food is craved by the famishing, for the practical and spiritual help it gives. The political unity that also came to our country two years ago was accepted with pride and gratitude as the prelude to permanent peace and prosperity. Reform was appearing everywhere. Inter-provincial jealousies had disappeared with the widespread development of inter-provincial communications. Out of disorder emerged the substantial beginnings of definite co-operation in political, social, and economic spheres. Well justified were we in entertaining the encouraging belief that at last the well-being of our people was a foremost concern of our Government, and that

unimpeded progress would be our lot both in domestic and international affairs.

"But as a snake strikes at its unsuspecting prey so struck Japan at us, and our hope of peace was crushed. We found ourselves involved in the coils of a war which soon expanded to the view of the world as the most colossal exhibition of remorseless barbarism that had ever stained the pages of history. Unrestrained fury and hate were loosened upon us. We fought back, unprepared as we were, because there was nothing else left for us to do. We are still fighting back. We shall continue fighting back. We must do so, or submit to slavery as a people, and death as a nation.

"We must fight, as every self-respecting nation must fight, because our country is being violated; because millions of our people have been put to flight, sacrificing their all, by fear of death; because hundreds of thousands of our helpless men, women and children have been slaughtered in agony, by bombs, by bullets, and by bayonets; because thousands of our unfortunate girls and women have been violently and shockingly outraged;

because personal and public property valued at billions of dollars has been wantonly demolished in villages, towns, and cities; because the most outrageous organized rapine the world has ever seen is being engaged in with the sinister object of destroying the means of livelihood of our survivors, as well as enriching the uniformed looters of Japan. It is the most gigantic spectacle of shameless wholesale systematic robbery by any nation for the beggaring of human beings of another nation that has ever been seen.

“The refugee problem is an immense and increasing one. As the vast homeless masses struggle into one district or another each district finds its difficulties increased by just as many refugees as arrive there after saturation point has been reached. Agricultural areas are able, without ostentation, to absorb great numbers, but there are the hungry and helpless masses always on the march to be taken care of. System and order are required to deal with the situation, and benefit or charity organizations must co-operate and interlace, rather than overlap, in order effectively to meet

the terrible situation.

“We are faced now with great responsibilities, and I am sure that they will be taken up with a will, and that courage and resoluteness will both come to the front and help us save our fellow citizens and our nation. Calamity such as ours calls for special qualities if it is to be overcome successfully. Not only must we have the courage to face our enemy, but we must have the courage to face the hitherto peaceful and industrious population of region upon region being folded back upon us by relentless invasion and thus increasing our burdens as well as testing our capabilities and our patriotism.

“Indeed, to be able to do justice to ourselves and materially cope with the situation we need not only physical and moral courage but we need the wisdom and strength of will to abandon all selfishness that may be part of us. What is called for now is the highest type of unquestioned co-operation, and the readiness to do everything helpful to which we can put our hands. There is no room now for personal pride, or individual irritations,

or doubts. There must be unified confidence in developing the means to one end, and that end is our national salvation and glory.

“Out of this great peril and trial may come great harm to China, or great blessings. Failure intelligently to cope with the task that lies before us might bring future chaos; but, if we handle our responsibilities successfully, nothing but national victory can result, even if we have to pay for it in years of further agony and blood.

“This war has been forced upon us, and the terrible slaughter of human beings has been permitted for some inscrutable reason. Let us feel that it is to shake our nation out of its apparent lethargy; out of what has been believed to be inherent indifference. There used to be provincial differences which kept our country distraught but they have been broken down not only by the political unity that came to China, and by the highways that opened provincial communication, but by the war that we are now fighting. Not only are troops of all provinces fighting together, but now people of all provinces are working together, and many,

unhappily, are fugitives together in one, to them, strange province or another.

“What this melting of differences in dialect, opinion, and feelings may do for China can be appreciated by anyone with some imagination, some hope, and some constructive energy. Out of the ashes which the Japanese are spreading all over our country will spring a phoenix of great national worth if we so will it. And if we, by determination, pull together and strive in every way possible to sustain our armies to resist our foes, and to help those who are suffering amongst us, we will surely see our country freed from the invaders. We can make a new China if we now make up our minds to work together, to be resolute in the performance of our tasks, and courageous in facing the main objective to defeat the enemy.

“Japan, owing to circumstances, is able to perpetrate the grossest inhumanities in our country in defiance of international law and humane concepts of civilization. The possible consequences to us and to the world of this contribution to chaos by Japan is terrifying, but we must stand up to

it, and do our best to achieve victory.

“The apparent acceptance by the Governments of First-class Powers of the infamous conduct of the Japanese army in violation of humane and other laws has bewildered large sections of our people. Many are more bewildered by the failure of those Governments to attempt even to protect their own interests by collectively moving in such a way as to compel Japan to abandon her brutalities. There are understandable reasons why they have not been able to do anything, but disappointing as the attitude of the governments has been it is clear that the terrible trials and sufferings of our people have deeply horrified the people of the civilized world. That is a comforting and consoling thing. In particular the people of Great Britain and the British Dominions and America, are, of their own volition, recording their condemnation of Japan's criminal debaucheries in our country. They are also testifying their practical sympathy with us by sending medical aid and money to help us in the great humane work of overcoming the consequences of the colossal calamity that has come upon us.

“I have personally received many hundreds of letters from all kinds of people living in various countries condoling with us, encouraging us, praying for us. The depth of expression shown in all these letters, the abiding faith in all of them that we will be victorious, is inspiring and deeply moving. The people of the great Democracies are doing what they can to help us in our woe; and that they will, if they can, do more as time goes on, is certain.

“What our foreign friends and sympathizers are doing deserves, and I am sure, will earn, our eternal gratitude. At the same time it is a direct challenge to us to go on fighting our own battle, and to intensify the work that has already been undertaken here for the amelioration of the lot of the survivors.

“With our civilians courageously taking up their burdens, the armed forces will be more tenacious in their efforts to win. Close co-operation between all who can help will profoundly influence the course of events to victory and to the ultimate glorification of our country.”

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

- hurt 創痛
 philosophy 沉毅
 people 民族
 beat us to our knees 打得我們屈膝
 invoke 求
 have survived great natural and political calamities
 雖經巨大之天災與政治上之禍患猶能存在
 prolonged 長期的
 entity 存在
 no matter 不管
 inherent 固有的
 to the fullest extent 充分；完全
 go far 有大效
 stamina 支持力；精力
 crave 渴望
 trials and tribulations 災難禍患
 the famishing 飢餓者
 prelude 開端
 inter-provincial 省際的
 disorder 紊亂；無秩序

justified 證明不誤
entertaining 懷
concern 關切之事
unimpeded 無阻礙的
lot 分
unsuspecting 不提防的
prey 掠奪物；犧牲者
involved in the coils of a war 捲入戰爭之漩渦
colossal 巨大的
barbarism 野蠻
unrestrained fury 無限的憤怒
fought back 抵抗
unprepared as we were=though we were
unprepared put to flight 迫使逃亡
shockingly 令人驚駭地
outrage 強姦
personal and public property 私人的與公衆的財產
billion 億兆（即無數之意）
demolish 毀壞
rapine 劫掠
sinister 凶惡的；險毒的
livelihood 生計
looters 強盜

wholesale 大規模的
systematic 有組織的
beggaring 致貧
immense 莫大的
struggle into 勉強擠入
saturation point 飽和點
benefit or charity organizations 賑濟機關
interlace 互相聯繫
overlap 重複
meet 適應
resoluteness 堅決
calls for 需求
relentless 殘忍的
to do justice to one's self 發揮才能
cope with the situation 與時局相抗衡
irritations 發怒
room 餘地
failure 不能
chaos 紛亂
inscrutable 難解的
lethargy 麻木；無生氣
differences 不和；爭端
distracted 分心的

-
- fugitive 逃亡者
dialect 方言
spring 發生
phoenix 永生之象徵(本義為鳳)
pull together 協力
perpetrate 犯(罪); 作(惡)
grossest 最大的
inhumanities 殘酷行爲
in defiance of 違犯
humane concepts 人道觀念
stand up to 對抗
acceptance 聽從
First-class Powers 諸國等強國
in violation of 侵犯
bewilder 迷惑
in particular 特別; 尤其
British Dominions 英屬海外領地(如坎拿大, 澳洲等)
debaucheries 放蕩淫佚
of their own volition 出於自願
condoling with 弔慰
inspiring 使人鼓舞的
moving 使人感動的

Democracies 民主國
woe 災難
gratitude 感激
challenge 要求
intensify 加強
amelioration 改善
tenacious 不屈不撓；堅持

Lesson 34

Milions Mobilize

(From "China at War")

A small group of foreign journalists who sped posthaste late in March over 1,000 kilometers from Hankow to reach Hsuehowfu, base of Chinese operations in the Tsinpu front, before its possible fall into Japanese hands, found the city throbbing with life and prosperity despite the possibility that the Japanese army by a day's forced march might take it away. Of panic and demoralization there were not the slightest traces—it must be remembered that the magnificent counter-attack which relieved

Hsuchow's danger was still some days from commencement.

On the rail journey, halted time and again by air alarms, the correspondents had passed through Chenchow, the junction city of the Peiping-Hankow and Lunghai railways south of the Yellow River, and were told that one third of the people had fled the city. At Kaifeng, the wealthy Honan capital, an exodus, though to a lesser degree, had taken place, and yet these cities with a population verging on a quarter million were comparatively safe with the Japanese march stopped north of the river.

Nearing Hsuchow, refugees were fleeing not from the city but towards it. It was a case of the nearer the Sino-Japanese front the calmer the populace and the tougher the resistance power. The tide of thought had changed for these civilians as the tide of battle had turned for the Chinese armies since the loss of Nanking. Fear of the Japanese had left these people; not even the daily shadow of bombing could upset their usual pattern of living. They had come under the sway of

Japan's most implacable foe, the mass mobilization of the Chinese nation.

In this most dangerous situation in China supposing the Japanese broke through and severed the civilian exit channels, there was a calmness and cheerfulness that baffled the Westerners who, reaching Hsuehow late at night, found a dozen hotels full to the brim and wondered at the emptiness of the thirteenth until they discovered next morning that it was a stone's throw from a station that had been bombed more than forty times. The explanation of the calmness rebutted the usual Western explanation as Oriental fatalism, stoicism or indifference. This calm confidence was a new awakening in China, a spiritual wielding of the people. General Matsui's words: "We are fighting only the militarists, not the people of China", had returned boomerang-like to deal Japan's hopes a mortal blow.

The picture given to the correspondents was of a Chinese front line of soldiers and a second line of defence that stretched back to the borders of Tibet with every man, woman and child as a part

of the great sinew of war. In the Sino-Japanese war of 1894 China lost because one man—Viceroy Li Hung-chang—fought single-handed in North China. In the Boxer Revolt, eight foreign powers defeated the Imperial House. In Mukden in 1931 the Chinese were defeated because the Manchurian troops did not fight. In this present war, for the first time in Chinese history, the whole race has taken up arms.

In Hsuechow a small army of highly trained men and women form the Mass Mobilizations Committee of the 5th War Area—the Tsinpu zone of operations. The committee was organized simultaneously with the establishment of the 5th War Area on December 10. Its main functions were to stimulate patriotism among the townfolk and peasants, to train the masses in guerrilla tactics for co-operation with the army, to help the civilian authorities in the rear to maintain order and discipline, to undertake espionage work and the detection of spies, to train groups all over the countryside in air defence work, first-aid, care of the wounded, welfare of the refugees, etc. The

organisation of the committee is closely related to the political structure of the area. Its head office is situated at the headquarters of the Commander-in-Chief of the area, General Li Tsung-jen, and its branch organizations are in every county and district throughout the province of Kiangsu. That distribution of the movement is duplicated in every other province in China.

All these committees and branch committees are operated by the Government and the military authorities with special emphasis on the participation of the people in executive capacities. Trained leaders launch each branch, supervise activities until the lessons of self-defence and national co-operation are thoroughly learnt, and then allow the people of each centre to take charge.

In each committee there are four departments: organization, propaganda, war aid (help for the wounded, refugee welfare, and maintenance of order), and intelligence work. The outstanding work of the first body consists of the group training of all able-bodied males between the ages of 18 and 45 and political and military training for

partisan warfare. Part and parcel of the giant scheme for turning the civilian masses into self-defence corps is the training of instructors. Drilled by regular army officers in infantry training, strategy, and guerrilla tactics, and trained by specialists in political science and mass propaganda work, these instructors have been turned out in thousands from Hsuechow and neighbouring cities and have been spread through the areas north and south of the Yellow River. More and more districts are establishing short-term military and political training schools for mass movement instructors.

The members of the publicity department of the Mass Mobilization Committee are stirring the people to further heights of resistance, imparting to them the full meaning of the war of self-defence, the necessity of resisting to save China and the Chinese race, and the urgency of maintaining opposition regardless of sacrifice. In the main the activities of the propaganda department are the printing of publications, war papers, slogans and pamphlets; the arranging of mass-meetings in streets and villages for patriotic speechmaking, and the

presentation of easily understood war plays portraying Chinese fortitude and Japanese brutality. In Kiangsu alone there are six propaganda corps of sixteen members who are working at the front and the rear. Their equipment includes radios, loud speakers, movie apparatus, hand printing plant and the equipment for stage presentations. One of the propaganda department's publications, the "Mobilization Daily" has a circulation of 15,000 copies in Hsuehchow.

The Mass Mobilization committee and its followers, who now number hundreds of thousands, have taken from the shoulders of the Government and the military authorities the burden of caring for wounded soldiers in transit, the distribution of refugees to safe areas, the welfare of hospital cases; the transportation of food-stuffs, and the preservation of law and order in places where the police are already overtaxed with wartime duties.

Discussing the work of the Mass Mobilization Committee in the 5th War Area, one of the executives declared: "During the hostilities between Shanghai and Nanking only the soldiers fought

but as a result of the subsequent stirring up of the masses and their training for actual warfare, every able-bodied Chinese will become a defender of his country. We are behind the Japanese in training and equipment but with the masses behind the army we expect to win the war. Mass training is especially necessary in China where so many of the people are illiterates and therefore slow in learning their duties to the state.

“Only two months ago the civilian population of this area was afraid of Japanese planes and gunfire but as a result of training and propaganda work things such as despondency, uncertainty and fear have been banished. During the past eight months we have learnt our defects and now we are confident that the Japanese cannot suppress us. We are increasing our efficiency every day. The outcome will not be the suppression of the Chinese race but the rejuvenation of China.

“As compared with the Western world in time of war, the mobilization of the masses is necessarily slow on account of the lack of education but the Japanese, by their atrocities upon the civilian

population, have accelerated our work and thousands of farmers and towns-people have taken up arms. With the enlightenment of the masses, Chinese civil administration has been able to keep functioning in Shansi and other provinces where the Japanese have only been able to occupy the lines of communication."

With Hsuehchow subjected to three of four air alarms each day and frequent actual bombings, the correspondents were able to see one magnificently effective offshoot of the Mass Mobilization Committee in action. Five hundred townsmen—clerks, cooks, merchants, shop assistants, waiters etc.—have organized a volunteer air defence corps in Hsuehchow. Their uniform is militia blue and their only war accoutrement is a big-sword slung across their backs. At the first blast of the warning siren they are on their way to their allotted stations. By the time the planes are overhead, every citizen of Hsuehchow is underground, in dugouts or burrows, shepherded to safety by the air defence men and distributed so well that the severe bombing of the city on March 23 only resulted in four deaths.

When bombs fall, these heroes of the open streets turn ambulance men and fire-fighters and race to the scene to succour the wounded and clear the streets of debris. When that is done they go back to their jobs. These volunteers buy their own uniforms and spend six hours of their own time each week in drill under police officers and regular army instructors. If war comes to Hsuechow they will turn soldiers; until then they will keep the wheels of trade moving. Theirs is the true spirit of the work of the Mass Mobilization Committee.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

- posthaste 急速地
kilometres 公里
Hsuechowfu 徐州府
Tsinpu 津浦(即自浦口至天津)
throbbing 活躍(本義為心跳)
panic 恐慌
demoralization 民氣沮喪

-
- counter-attack 反攻
correspondents 通訊員
Chenchow 鄭州
junction 交叉點
Kaifeng 開封
verging on 近乎
calmer 愈鎮靜
tougher 愈強韌
switched 轉變
tactics 戰術
upset 令紊亂
under the sway of 在……的支配下
implacable 難恕的
mass mobilization 民衆動員
exit 出口
cheerfulness 高興
baffled 困惑
rebut 舉反證以駁斥
Westerners 西方人
full to the brim 滿的
fatalism 聽天由命(即宿命論)
emptiness of the thirteenth 無不幸之現象
stoicism 不動情

-
- wielding 發揮
Matsui 日本大將之名
boomerang-like 飛旋鏢(澳洲土人之武器)似指自
 蒙其害也
sinew 支持者;中堅
Viceroy Li Hung-Chang 李鴻章總督
Boxer Revolt 拳匪之亂(或庚子之亂)
Imperial House 皇室(指滿清)
simultaneously 同時地
espionage 間諜
detection 偵察
General Li Tsung-jen 李宗仁上將
duplicated 相同
launch 創辦
supervise 監督
intelligence work 情報工作
Partisan warfare 游擊戰
Part and parcel 緊要部份
specialists 專家
short-term 短期的
publicity 宣傳
stirring 激起
imparting 傳授

maintaining opposition regardless of sacrifice

不願犧牲以持續抵抗

in the main 大概;居多

slogans 標語

pamphlets 小冊子

brutality 獸性;殘忍

radios 無線電機

movie apparatus 電影放映機

equipment for stage presentations 演劇道具

circulation 銷數

transit 運送

hospital cases 醫院病人

food-stuffs 食品原料

overtaxed 過勞

executives 行政長官

despondency 灰心;失望

rejuvenation 新生;復興

offshoot 支會;分會

as compared with 與……比較

civil administration 民政

cooks 廚役

waiters 侍者;堂倌

accoutrement 裝備

- big-sword 大刀
 slung 懸掛
 at the first blast of the warning siren 在警報汽
 笛一響之時
 burrows 穴
 shepherded 指導
 fire-fighters 救火員
 ambulance men 搬運傷者之人
 race 趕至
 scene 出事地點
 succour 援救
 clear the streets of debris 將街上被毀後堆積物
 清除

Lesson 35

Japan Between Two Wars: A Survey

By Mirian S. Farley

Japan has announced her intention of remaining neutral in the European War. It is obviously to her advantage to do so, for, in the present confused

situation at least, Japan's interest clearly lies in keeping aloof from foreign entanglements, steadily pursuing her aims in China, playing one Power or coalition against another, and using the freedom of maneuver conferred by an independent policy to reap whatever gains she can in either the political or the economic field. On the economic front, however, statements by her responsible ministers indicate that she herself views the new developments in Europe as likely to aggravate rather than to lighten her economic difficulties.

This at any rate was the line taken by Finance Minister Aoki in his address to the conference of prefectural governors as reported in *The New York Times*. Mr. Aoki threw cold water on the stock market's anticipations of a war boom. An increased demand for Japanese goods is expected, but the shortage of raw material and of labor would tend to limit exports and conditions might cause an actual reduction of exports, he remarked. Mr. Aoki gave the governors a blunt warning that Japan must prolong and ever accentuate war-time economy. Not only would taxes rise with the next budget,

supply
situation and
foreign trade with
still showed a considerable amount

The extent to which Japan's national income
have been diverted to war uses is roughly indicated
by the progress of war budgets. In 1937-38,
approximately Y.2,500 million was appropriated
for the "China incident"; in 1938-39, Y.4,800
million, in 1939-40 (counting Y.700 million "outside
the budget"), Y.5,300 million. If military and
naval expenditures not directly connected with the
war be included, the sums reach Y.4,000 million,
Y.6,000 million and Y.7,100 million for these
years respectively. It is probable, although no
satisfactory income statistics exist, that the figure
for 1939-40 represents approximately one third of
the national income, or a larger proportion than
the United States, a richer country, spent at the
height of the World War effort; and it is certain

July,
for 1939-40 are
of the last pre-war year.
just about balance the civil expen-
ditures of the government, leaving the remainder
to be met by loans. The national debt has nearly
doubled in two years, standing at Y.18,843 million
at the end of July, 1939.

Meanwhile production has not kept pace with
the enlarged demand for goods created by military
expenditures, leaving a net drain on the resources
of the country and in particular upon the supplies
of consumption goods. In the two years since the
outbreak of war, the total volume of industrial
production has increased only about 10%, while
military outlays (adjusted for price changes) have
risen around 40%. The output of capital goods
has continued to expand, increasing some 24% in

two years, while that of consumers' goods has steadily declined, losing 9% in the same period. Shortage of raw material and machinery, shortage of labor, especially skilled labor, the inevitable waste involved in shifting from peace-time to war-time production, and concentration upon ersatz products are mainly responsible for this somewhat disappointing showing. Agricultural production has suffered an absolute decline, with the chief crops—coccons, rice, wheat and barley—all decreasing in 1938 and probably in 1939 also. While unfavorable weather conditions were no doubt partly responsible, the chief cause of this contraction must be ascribed to the withdrawal of labor from agriculture and the shortage and high price of fertilizer, both consequences of the war.

With production thus lagging behind war expenditure, and with huge bond issues forming the basis for both credit and currency expansion, an inflationary movement was inevitable, although thus far it has been kept within relatively moderate bounds. Indications of the trend, however, are to be found in the government bond holdings of

the Bank of Japan, which rose from Y.845 million in June, 1937, to Y.1,776 million in June, 1939; in the increase of note circulation in Japan proper from Y.1,515 million to Y.2,340 million in the same period; and in the steady rise in the Japanese price level, contrary to the world trend. The Bank of Japan announced index of wholesale prices in June, 1939, stood 13% above the level of June, 1937, although various price indices in Great Britain and the United States has fallen from 11% to 17% in the same period. The same factors which have retarded the growth of production in Japan—shortage of raw materials, disorganization of industry, and inflated costs of production—have made their impact felt even more forcefully in the realm of foreign trade.

Total exports declined by 15% in 1938, while exports to countries outside the yen bloc dropped 36%. Some improvement has been noted in 1939, partly, no doubt, as a result of the link system introduced in 1938 with a view to stimulating the export trade. Unfortunately that makes no contribution toward balancing the nation's international

accounts. Consequently, although imports have been drastically restricted to save foreign exchange, they still overbalance the exports in trade with foreign-currency areas and necessitate a constant drain of gold to redress the balance. This continuous excess of imports, together with reduced receipts from shipping as Japanese vessels have been withdrawn from foreign waters into coastal and China Sea service, and in the absence of any substantial amount of realizable foreign assets or external credits, has led to a steady depletion of Japan's gold supply.

War-time controls have penetrated into every phase of economic life: foreign trade, currency and exchange, prices, wages and profits, distribution of raw and finished materials, allocation of labor, shipping, banking and investment. The keynote of these measures is development of heavy industry at the expense of light industry, closer integration of all departments of economic effort on the basis of the yen-bloc unit, and enforced curtailment of present consumption in the anticipation of future profit. Their effect on the economic evolution of

Japan will unquestionably be profound.

Such was the situation in which Japan found herself at the outbreak of war in Europe. She had not achieved the quick victory for which she hoped. She had expended in China a large portion of her none too abundant war-making resources. Her economy had been subjected to a severe strain the intensity of which had shown no sign of diminishing. The economic gains of the operation had fallen far short of balancing the costs.

The outbreak of war in Europe must profoundly alter the outlook in the Far East, but the direction of change is still veiled in obscurity. What line-up will emerge from the present fiesta of international legerdemain? Will it be a long or a short war? How will it affect the Far Eastern policies of Great Britain, the Soviet Union and the United States? How will it affect China's prospects, politically and economically? Until more light is thrown on such questions as these, speculation as to the future course of events in Asia is decidedly tenuous. On the assumption, however, that the war will be prolonged and that Japan will remain

neutral, we may ask how Japan is likely to be affected economically. Would such a turn of events increase or decrease her existing difficulties?

The immediate repercussions would be principally in the field of foreign trade. Here it is appropriate first to survey briefly the extent of Japan's dependence upon countries now belligerent for markets and raw materials, on the basis of 1939 figures.

Poland is a negligible quantity in Japan's foreign trade. Germany also is unimportant on the export side, although she has been a fairly good customer of "Manchukuo." The British Empire, however, accounts for about 18% of Japan's export trade, India, Great Britain, Australia, Burma, the Straits Settlements, Canada and New Zealand being the principal British markets, in order of importance. The French Empire takes only 2%, France, Morocco and Syria accounting for the bulk of the trade.

Japan's trade with Germany, of course, has already been largely cut off. Her exports to Allied countries are likely to be seriously handicapped by import and exchange restrictions, higher freight

rates and war risk insurance; reports from Japan already indicate that such disturbance is being felt. On the other hand, such impediments did not prevent Japan's trade with the Allies, during the World War, from rising far above the level of pre-war years. In fact the bulk of her trade gains in this period were with belligerent rather than with neutral countries, since the former category included not only England, France and Russia but also China, the British colonies and dominions, and the United States. The situation has changed in the meantime, however, as will be pointed out below.

On the import side, Germany is a fairly important supplier of Japan, furnishing 5.6% of her total imports in recent months. These presumably consisted chiefly of machinery and tools, metal products, chemicals and other specialized manufactures. France and her colonies are not very important to Japan accounting for only 1.5% of her total imports. The British Empire, however, is extremely important, supplying 20.1% of the total.

Japan is dependent on the British Empire for an important portion of her war and peace-time materials. For example, ores and pig iron from India and British Malaya, lead from Canada, India and Australia, tin from the Straits Settlements, aluminum from Canada and Great Britain, zinc from Australia and Canada, coal from Indo-China, and machinery from Great Britain formed, in the period immediately preceding the outbreak of the Sino-Japanese War, from 15% to 75% of Japan's total imports of these commodities. Canada and the French colony of New Caledonia between them have a practical monopoly of the world's nickel resources; Japan gets mangarese from India. In event of major hostilities the Allied munitions industries will of course have first claim on these resources. Great Britain has already declared her intention of preempting the Australian surplus of zinc, copper and lead. Japan also secures from the British Empire large quantities of rubber (from the Straits Settlements), cotton and other vegetable fibers (from India), wool (from Australia, South Africa and New Zealand), and other materials.

important in both war and peace.

More serious for Japan than any actual deprivation of supplies, in event of prolonged war in Europe, is likely to be their higher cost. For many of the commodities now supplied by belligerent nations Japan can, if necessary, though with some inconvenience, turn to the United States—already her chief source of war and other materials—or to other neutrals. But if a genuine war boom eventually develops, general shortages of war materials will occur, with consequent advances in price which will increase Japan's foreign exchange difficulties. It may be noted also that if a seller's market in such materials develops, the movement in the United States for an embargo against Japan will be considerably strengthened.

If Japan is unable to offer satisfactory assurances to the Western Powers, it is equally possible that their assistance to China may be maintained or increased, and coupled with reprisals against Japan. In this event the outlook for Japan would be decidedly gloomy. Another unknown factor is the Soviet Union, which has yet to make clear its

intentions in the Far East. All in all, Japan's economic outlook in the present stage of the European War is highly uncertain like that of most other countries.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

remaining neutral 保持中立
entanglement 糾紛;纏結
coalition 聯盟
maneuver 動作
aggravate 加甚
lighten 減輕
at any rate 無論如何
Finance Minister 財政大臣
prefectural 縣的
The New York Times 紐約泰晤士報
stock 股票
anticipations 期望
threw cold water on 使... 挫折
boom 價格飛漲
shortage 缺乏

-
- blat warning 率直之警告
accentuate 著重
controlled economy 統制經濟
budget 預算
foreign currency 外幣
standpoint 觀察點
unconditional 無條件的
optimism 樂觀
foreign trade 國外貿易
yen bloc 日圓集團
balance 差額(指貿易)
divert 轉用
appropriate 專用
statistics 統計
ratio 比率
in effect 實際上
met (Past form of "meet") 負擔
steeply 過度地;不合理地
the drive for rearmament 努力擴軍
tax receipts 稅收
last pre-war year 戰前之一年
kept pace with 並駕齊驅
a net drain 純粹之消耗

-
- consumption goods 消費品
outlay 費用;支出
capital goods 資本財(經濟學名詞)
decline 低降
ersatz 代用品
cocoons 蠶繭
barley 大麥
contraction 減少
ascribed to 歸諸;由於
fertilizer 肥料
lagging 落後
trend 趨向
huge bond issues 大量公債之發行
an inflationary movement 通貨膨脹之趨向
within relatively moderate bounds 在比較有節制
之範圍內
note circulation 紙幣流通
Japan proper 日本本部
price level 物價水準
retard 妨礙
index of wholesale prices 批發價指數
disorganization 混亂
impact 衝突

- realm 範圍
drastically 劇烈地
redress 補償
assets 資產
depletion 用竭
penetrate 普及
wages and profits 工資與利潤
allocation 分配
shipping 航運
investment 投資
integration 完成
curtailment 節省
strain 緊迫
had fallen far short of 遠不足以
outlook 前途
veiled in obscurity 未判明
fiesta 休假日
legerdemain 變戲法
prospects 前途
speculation 臆測
tenuous 不易捉摸
repercussions 反響
principally 大概

-
- negligible 不重要的;可忽略的
customer 顧客
India 印度
Australia 澳大利亞聯邦
Burma 緬甸
Canada 加拿大聯邦
The Straits Settlements 海峽殖民地(英)
New Zealand 新西蘭領地
Morocco 摩洛哥
Syria 叙利亞
cut off 斷絕
freight rates 運輸費
war risk insurance 戰時損害保險費
specialized manufactures 作特別用途之製造品
ores 礦石
pig iron 生鐵塊
British Malaya 英屬馬來亞
aluminum 鋁
zinc 鋅
New Caledonia 新喀利多尼亞(法)
nickel 鎳
manganese 錳
preempting 以先買權取得

surplus 剩餘

vegetable fibers 植物纖維

Lesson 36

The League of Nations

(From "The World Voice")

Nations face to-day the dangerous fact that social and political ideas have failed to keep up with economic and scientific progress. Modern means of communication have made us all close neighbours and we are increasingly dependent upon one another for the needs of daily life. Yet instead of all joining forces to fight mankind's real enemies, poverty, ignorance and disease, we fight among ourselves. Obviously we have failed to develop either effective international organization or the intelligence to use it. One of the main causes of the World War was lack of international organization in a world united by economic ties, but plagued with nationalism, militarism and imperialism. Realizing that another war might

mean the destruction of our civilization, statesmen in different countries even before 1918 began to lay plans for an organization by which war might be prevented. The League of Nations was the outgrowth of these plans.

First we shall consider how the League of Nations is organized and then shall briefly review its record for the past nineteen years. That record is a mixed one, composed of both failures and successes. At the moment the international situation is admittedly discouraging and the members of the League of Nations are not using its machinery as it had been hoped they would do. For this very reason study of the League's organization and methods of work is all the more essential in order that changes may be made intelligently, if such changes are necessary. Brought into relief more conspicuously than ever by the present plight of the world is the fact that the only alternative to international anarchy and war is international organization and co-operation. The present League of Nations marks mankind's first groping effort towards that noble goal.

The League of Nations Covenant, or constitution, formed Part I of the Treaty of Versailles and of the subsequent peace treaties with Austria, Bulgaria and Hungary. The League actually came into existence on January 10, 1920, when the signatory Powers deposited their ratifications of Treaty of Versailles at Paris.

The original members of the League were that twenty-nine Allied and Associated Powers which were signatories to the treaties of peace and the thirteen neutral states which were invited to accede to the Covenant. In addition, "any fully self-governing State, Dominion, or Colony" may be admitted to membership by a two-thirds vote of the League Assembly.

The machinery of the League of Nations consists of three parts—the Assembly, the Council and the Secretariat, and it is important to know just what each one of these bodies does. The Assembly consists of representatives of all member states of the League, each member having but one vote and the right to send not more than three representatives, men or women. Once a year in

September the Assembly meets at Geneva, and its ordinary session lasts about a month. Extraordinary sessions may be held. The Assembly may deal with any matter "within the sphere of the League, or affecting the peace of the world." The Assembly serves as an international forum for the free public discussion of general questions of international policy and as the directing force of League activities. It regularly reviews the work of the past year and plans new work for the succeeding year, votes the budget and elects the non-permanent members of the Council. All decisions of the Assembly must be unanimous, except in such cases as are specially provided for by the Covenant, or in matters of procedure. It must be remembered that at the Assembly and in its committee meetings, the delegates carry on their discussions in public. The galleries of the Assembly Hall are crowded with press representatives and visitors.

The Council consists at present of fifteen members, four permanent and eleven non-permanent members. The Assembly each year elects three

of these non-permanent members to serve for three years, and they take office immediately on election. The Covenant provides that the United States shall have a permanent seat in the Council, should she join the League. The Council meets regularly three times a year, and at other times in case of crisis. Its duties include the consideration of political dispute, the preparation of plans for world disarmament and supervision over the carrying-out of the mandates entrusted to certain states as explained later. The Council approves appointments made by the Secretary-General in the Secretariat. In practice the Council has handled the mere immediate questions and has acted as an executive to carry out the recommendations of the Assembly.

The Assembly and Council meet periodically and representatives come and go as governments change. But the members of the Secretariat are appointed for long terms and are at work continuously. The seat of the League is at Geneva, and the Secretariat naturally is established there. It constitutes a permanent international civil service, composed of some six hundred men and women.

representing approximately fifty different nations, but in no way responsible to their own governments. They are servants of the League, paid by the League and responsible to it alone. General supervision of the work of the Secretariat rests in the hands of the Secretary-General, who is also *ex officio* Secretary-General to both the Assembly and the Council. He is the official representative of the League when these bodies are not in session. It is his duty to summon an emergency session of the Council if any member so requests.

The members of the Secretariat are grouped in sections, according to the nature of the questions with which they have to deal. Certain sections act as the secretariats for the technical organizations or committees responsible for the carrying-on of specialized League activities. The principal sections of the Secretariat are as follows: Political, Financial, Economic Relations, Communications and Transit, Minorities, Mandates, Disarmament, Health, Opium Traffic, Social Questions, Intellectual Co-operation, Legal, Information.

It is the duty of members of these sections to

carry on research in their special fields and to prepare data on the basis of which decisions can be reached. In this way they lend valuable assistance to the Council and Assembly, and frequently suggest policies. The Secretariat also performs the extensive secretarial work of the League—keeping records, carrying on correspondence, publishing reports, preparing for conferences, registering treaties, translating documents into the two official languages, French and English.

In addition to the Assembly, Council and Secretariat, several auxiliary organizations have been created in connection with the League to work continuously on certain of the technical questions in the world to-day likely to give rise to political disputes. Also certain permanent committees have been established to deal with other problems which, while not potential causes of war, are international in scope. These technical organizations and committees are composed of eminent experts from various countries who carry on their work in a non-political atmosphere, and submit their recommendations to the Assembly and Council. The

so-called technical organizations are four: the Economic and Financial Organization, the Organization for Communication and Transit, the Health Organization and the International Organization for intellectual Cooperations among the advisory committees are the committee on Traffic in Opium and other Dangerous Drugs, and the Committee on Slavery.

The League is financed by contributions from the member states according to their ability to pay, as determined by the Assembly. League budgets have been steadily cut in recent years until the budget for 1939, including the cost of the World Court and the International Labour Office, is about ten million dollars, surely a small sum when we consider that over seventeen billion dollars is being spent by the nations of the world for armaments in 1938.

For its first sixteen years the League was inadequately situated in Geneva. The annual Assembly was held first in the historic Salle de la Reformation, or in other buildings hired for the occasion. The Secretariat offices were in a

remodelled hotel, which also afforded space in its Glass Room for Council sessions. But in the autumn of 1935 the League moved into its new and permanent home, long planned and now completed.

The project began ten years ago with an international competition in which three hundred and seventy-seven architects filed plans. Five architects were selected to make the final designs and to supervise the work. Construction began in 1931, with three hundred to five hundred workmen of ten different nationalities employed at various times. The total cost is about eight million gold francs, of which John D. Rockefeller Jr. donated two million dollars for the Library.

Situated on the slopes of Lake Geneva, commanding an inspiring view of the distant Mont Blanc, this truly noble structure bears silent testimony to the permanency of League ideals. It comprises the Assembly Hall, which provides seats for 2,000 persons, the Council Chamber, the Secretariat with some four hundred offices and the League Library, which is designed for two million volumes and offers special facilities for study and

research. The Council Chamber walls are decorated with magnificent frescoes by the Spanish artist, Jose Maria Sert, the gift of the Spanish Government to the League. The originals of these frescoes may be seen in the lobby of Rockefeller Centre in New York City.

The Preamble of the Covenant lays the two main purposes of the League as follows: "to promote international co-operation and to achieve international peace and security," As a matter of fact, these two purposes are inter-related. "Co-operation" in the various fields of international life helps to promote "peace and security," for as nations work together, prejudices and suspicion should tend to disappear and peace should be the natural result.

One fact, however, must be steadily borne in mind. The League is not a thing in itself, nor a super-state, but a method of co-operation open to those states which wish to use it. The Assembly and Council are composed of representatives of the governments of member states. So-called "League failures" are frequently failures of League members to live up to League ideals. When the majority

of the people in the world truly desire co-operation rather than conflict, and this attitude is duly reflected in their governments, the League offers the machinery whereby this will for peaceful progress may be realized.

We shall first consider the League's direct efforts towards peace and security through (a) settlement of disputes and (b) reduction of armaments, and shall then review (c) the League's activities in other varied forms of international co-operation. These activities may well be viewed as a more indirect method of achieving peace.

After the Manchurian and Ethiopian affairs, statesmen began asking themselves what was wrong, why League methods for providing security against aggression failed to work, and what changes, if any, should be made in League machinery. At the special session in July, 1936, the Sixteenth Assembly adopted a resolution inviting League members to submit "proposals to improve the application of the principles of the Covenant." Some twenty states forwarded their proposals to Geneva and the matter was discussed by a special

committee as well as by subsequent Assemblies.

Naturally we cannot discuss here all the details of the proposals that have been made for League reform. All agree that to be truly strong, the League must be made universal and that all states of any importance must be members. Yet the ambitions and conduct of Germany, Japan and Italy are certainly not peaceful nor are their methods democratic. How would it be possible to bring them back into a peaceful and essentially democratic body without impairing League ideals and weakening its obligations?

Some governments support the idea of "regional sanctions," that is, that economic or military action against an aggressor, or in aid of his victim, should be pledged only by the neighbouring states, or those most closely concerned. Other League members would be sympathetic, of course, and at least should not give support to an aggressor. Other states oppose any change in the existing provisions and point out that Article 16 has never had a thorough trial. They claim that what is needed is not change in the Covenant, but acceptance by League members

of their full responsibilities.

The plain truth is, of course, that the coercive provisions of the Covenant have never been used but once and then only haltingly, and that there is at present an obvious unwillingness to use them unless national interests are involved. The question, therefore, is a practical one; whether provisions such as those in Article 16 should be regarded as dead wood and cut away, leaving the League merely an international conference body doing non-political work, or whether they should be retained and fresh efforts made to render them effective. One suggestion is that the League might be made nearly universal were the sanction obligations contained in an optional clause of the Covenant with those nations undertaking them who wished to do so.

HELPS TO STUDY

VOCABULARY

have failed to keep up 不曾趕上

ignorance 無知識

一
國
館 書 圖 京 南

- lack of 缺乏
plagued with nationalism, militarism and imperialism 爲國家主義，黷武主義，與帝國主義所殃及。
economic ties 經濟的聯繫
record 經歷
admittedly 被認爲真實地
discouraging 使人沮喪的
machinery 機構
all the more 愈加
alternative 另一轉變之道
anarchy 紛擾
groping (暗中)摸索的
Treaty of Versailles 凡爾賽和約(參預上次歐戰諸國所訂)
came into existence 成立
ratifications 批准
accede 承諾
Secretariat 秘書處
Geneva 日內瓦(瑞士)
session 會期
forum 公共會場
non-permanent 非永久的

-
- unanimous 全場一致的
procedure 程序
in public 當衆；公開
press representatives 新聞界代表
in case of crisis 在(時局)緊急時
disarmament 裁減軍備
mandates 委任統治(專指國聯)
approve 批准；認可
Secretary-General 祕書長
in practice 事實上
handle 處理
recommendations 付託之事
periodically 按期
civil service 行政部
in no way 並不
to summon an emergency session 召集緊急會議
specialized 專門的
Minorities 未成年
Information 情報
data (討論之)材料
correspondence 通訊
auxiliary 輔助的
to give rise to 引起；使發生

-
- finance 供以經費
World Court 國際法庭
International Labour Office 國際勞工局
inadequately 不適當地
annual 每年的
Salle de Reformation 改造堂(白內瓦一建築物之名)
hire 租賃
remodelled 改造
architects 建築師
francs 佛郎(法幣名)
donate 捐贈
Mont Blanc (French) 白山(山名)
commanding an inspiring view 俯瞰動人的風景
bears silent testimony 作無言之證明
comprise 包括
facilities 便利
fresco 壁畫
lobby (議院之)應接室
Preamble 弁言;序文
security 安全
inter-related 相互關係的
tend 趨向
super-state 超然的國家

duly 恰好

Manchurian and Ethiopian affairs 滿洲事件與阿
比西尼亞事件

forward 提出

impairing 損傷

weakening 使薄弱

victim 遭難者，受害者

regional sanctions 區域制裁

existing provisions 現行之條規

coercive 強迫的

haltingly 躊躇地

unwillingness 不願

dead wood 廢物

optional clause 隨意的條款

Lesson 37

Mussolini Grows Old

By Frederic Sondern

The most unpardonable journalistic crime in Rome is to write about Mussolini's age, mention the fact that he is a grandfather, describe any indisposition he may have, or allude to any sign

of his increasing years. Breaches of the rule send him into tantrums. "Time" magazine caused a shower of sparks in the Palazzo Venezia recently by mentioning his stomach ulcers and eyeglasses.

It is not vanity so much as fear that makes Il Duce del Fascismo so angry—fear that he will not much longer be able to hold the reins and exert the absolute power which has always been the consuming ambition of his life. A short time ago, an old friend of the Duce had an appointment with him at the Palazzo Venezia. Mussolini was a few minutes late returning from a visit elsewhere, and, stickler for promptness that he is, came bounding up the stairs two steps at a time. He was out of breath, but in rare good humor, he panted, "Must be getting old. We peasants age rapidly, you know." A moment later, he apparently realized what he had said. He scowled and shifted impatiently during the conversation that followed, paying little attention. Finally he burst out, "I hate old age, you know. The inaction, muddled thoughts, slow reactions. I loathe old people. Never have them around me. I'd rather be dead

than old."

Outwardly Mussolini has not changed very much during the past few years. At fifty-seven, the lines in his face are somewhat heavier, but the quick, springy step that he uses in public is still as elastic, the magnificent posture which always makes him seem taller than his five feet six inches is still as erect, his salute as snappy and untiring as ever. And his speeches have the same clipped precise cogency that they always had.

In private, the change has been gradual. He still "jumps out of bed like Napoleon" at about six o'clock in the morning after a sound, seven-hour sleep. Insomnia is rare with him. He "shuts off his worries," he says, "like closing a sluice-gate." After rubbing himself down with cold water and shaving, he drinks camomile tea and goes riding in the gardens of his Villa Torlonia.

But the pace of his horsemanship is not what it was, and he no longer takes those phenomenal jumps. His doctor has tactfully warned against the strain. Mussolini has also had to stop the mad motorcycle dashes on the Ostia road which he

enjoyed so much, and his hair-raising skiing swoops in winter on the slopes of Monte Terminillo. His schedule at the Palazzo Venezia remains about the same. He arrives at nine, stays until two, goes home for lunch, has a nap, returns about four, and works until eight. But he takes his work much easier than he used to. He receives only the most important visitors. Few diplomats, no newspapermen, except his personal mouthpiece Virginio Gayda, and only a handful of prominent foreigners have been admitted to the presence during the last year. Even Jim Farley was turned away. And his favorite remark to his own ministers is a snapping, "Get on with it, Don't waste my time."

The real change has come in the Duce's mind. Not many, even in Rome, know what staggering blows Mussolini's ambitions, plans and pride taken from the "wild man of the North," Adolf Hitler. Since Italy reached her zenith with the conquest of Ethiopia and Rome went wild when, on May 9, 1936, the Duce shouted his proclamation of the Empire to packed thousands in the Piazza Venezia.

Mussolini has skidded rapidly from the position of world power which he thought was finally within reach. And to Mussolini, who has lived by the precepts of Julius Caesar and the lessons of Napoleon, that is a soul-searing realization. He was fooled—he knows that now—and allowed his chances for real greatness to be taken from under his nose by a man whom he has always contemptuously disliked and of whom he said at their first meeting; "That man's face is a disgrace to Europe."

When the dictators met for the first time in June, 1934, at Venice, Mussolini was not impressed with his colleague. Besides criticizing his face, he found Hitler a weak, disorderly, undisciplined dreamer. A French journalist who knew the Duce well warned him. "Why," said Mussolini, "don't you French make your peace with Hitler?" "Because we don't trust him," answered the Frenchman. "Eh bien!" replied the Duce, "I have confidence in him. And I can handle him."

Mussolini's confidence was even stronger when he went to Germany in September, 1937. Hitler

had been an obedient servant. During the darkest days of the Ethiopian crisis, even when war with Great Britain threatened over the League's sanctions, Berlin had performed at the Duce's command. When, on Chancellor Dollfuss' assassination, Italian troops rushed to the Brenner, Hitler dropped his "Putsch" against Austria like a hot coal and went scuttling for safety. And now the Führer was turning Germany inside out to give his master an imperial welcome. Mussolini saw the vast Krupp armament works, the airplane factories, and the strength of the German army. This was almost too good to be true, he told his son-in-law, Ciano. With Hitler a willing henchman, backed by this power, Mussolini's fascism could dominate Europe tomorrow. Intoxicated by these visions of power, the dictators talked it over. Germany was to have Austria and colonies; Italy a Mediterranean empire. The Balkans would be divided between them in two spheres of influence. The pact was sealed with a hand-shake, and when the dictators entered the Olympic Stadium in Berlin on the last night of the celebrations to make their final speeches,

they both had the look of triumphant Caesars. At last Mussolini felt that a real "Imperium Romanum" was in his grasp. "Great and fateful days for Italy are ahead," he shouted.

The Führer, however, took precipitate payment for services to be rendered. In March, 1938, his columns rolled into Vienna. The Duce knew it was coming, but not so soon. He agreed, twenty-four hours before Hitler struck, only because he had to. After the "Putsch" was over, a telegram arrived from Berlin: "Mussolini, I will never forget what you have done." One of Mussolini's satraps suggested to a circle of friends that the Duce should wire back, "Neither will I."

When the Führer rumbled into Czechoslovakia in September, 1938, the Duce saw the handwriting on the wall. Knowing that complete control of the former republic would mean domination of the Balkans, he tried his best at Munich to save at least a buffer State strong enough to retard the Nazi march to the Black Sea. Chamberlain and Daladier gave way to Hitler so easily, however, that there was no chance of doing so without provoking

Hitler's undying hatred. Back in Rome Mussolini and Ciano went into a huddle. If France and Britain had knuckled under so easily to Germany, they would do the same for Italy. Hitler would now be bound to help, in exchange for past favors. A telephone call to Berlin confirmed this. And on November 30, the Chamber of Fasces and Corporations in Rome suddenly resounded with shouts of "Tunisia!" "Djibouti!"—a "spontaneous demonstration of the Italian people." And in the Mediterranean, the Italian Fleet began concentrating.

Breathlessly from the Palazzo Venezia and the Palazzo Chigi, Mussolini and Ciano watched and waited Hitler's opening lines. The cue had been given. And then came one of the biggest double crosses in modern European history. The German press fluttered mildly—yes, wasn't it a shame that Italy was so maltreated? In London and Paris, the German Ambassadors were more definite. No, they knew absolutely nothing about Mussolini's claims. No, Hitler had no intention of giving active support to Italy. In Paris, Daladier and

Bonnet first heaved sighs of relief, then filled their lungs for a bellowed "No!" in the Chamber of Deputies. Mussolini's Mediterranean empire came crashing down in a cloud of dust. And for four days, in Rome, he would see no one.

He has salvaged as much as he could from the wreckage. The Axis remained in theory. To have given it up would have been to lose all bargaining against England and France. But the German trade and military "missions" gradually disappeared. Once more the Duce tried to influence Hitler. Convinced that war with Poland would bring in England and France and start a European conflagration, he sent Ciano to Berchtesgaden to warn the Führer, and to tell him that Italy would not stand by him. When Ciano returned to Rome with Hitler's shriek of "You ass, You son of an ass!" still ringing in his ears, Mussolini realized that the game was up, and said so. The Axis had crumbled to nothing, and with it his dreams of empire. For "whoever wins this war, "as a high official who parrots his master's opinions commented to us recently in Rome, "will not treat

Italy well."

Mussolini's mistakes cost him more than his dreams. They have cost him much of the dictator's most essential possession: prestige at home. Every morning, a few minutes after nine, a chubby little man with a double chin patters past the two saluting guards at the doorway of the Palazzo Venezia, climbs the stairs of the first floor, brushes by the tasseled curtain, walks quickly—unannounced—into the Duce's room, and sits down in the chair facing his desk. It is Auturo Rocchini, chief of the secret police, the OVRA, Mussolini's closest adviser and probably the second most powerful man in Italy. Rocchini got his job in 1926, after Mussolini had escaped assassination for the fourth time in a year. "Am I the head of a government," raged the dictator, "or am I just a walking target for the bullets of madmen and gangsters?" He summoned the obscure little police chief of the remote village of Genes, who had impressed him with his ability some years before.

It seemed a crazy appointment. But within a year Rocchini had reformed the Italian police and

even cleaned some of the criminally opportunistic elements out of the Fascist Party. Even such powerful men as Augusto Turati, Secretary of the Fascist Party, fell under the axe and were banished to the dreaded Lipari Islands, the Fascist political concentration camp. Since then, Bocchini has nipped every political intrigue in the bud. His tentacles reach into every stratum of Italian society. The gossip of the aristocratic tea table and the opinion of the dock workers in Genoa alike are laid—digested and precisely ordered—before the Duce every morning. Bocchini has an amazing memory and can reel off his report without notes, to Mussolini's delight.

During the past two years Arturo has brought his master the story of increasing discontent. Abyssinia, in terms of coffee and the promised raw materials, gold and other riches, has been a great disappointment. There is now no coffee in Italy and the Italians love to sit over their espresso. The campaign in Spain was very unpopular. Homecoming troops spread the stories of the routs at Guadalajara and the execrable Italian generalship.

The cost in men and money seemed absolutely unjustifiable to the Italian people. And above all—the Axis. After Mussolini's first visit to Berlin, stories began to circulate. The Italians are much more frank in their conversation than the Germans dare to be. "Mussolini makes history, but Hitler makes geography" was one of the pet cracks in Rome. And when hated Nazi satraps began visiting the capital to "advise" the government, even high Fascist officials began saying, "Yes, it used to be nice in Mussolini's day."

Things like that rattle the Duce. He has no sense of humor to fall back on—he hates jokes, particularly about himself—and above all, he has no friends. Always misanthropic, he has become even more reserved recently. Even men like Dino Grandi and Italo Balbo, who have been with him since the beginning of his career, complain that he treats them as nothing more than useful assistants. He often makes them stand in his presence. "When they stand, he has sometimes announced, "people don't gabble so much, and you can get rid of them quicker." When he was still a newspaper editor

in Milan, he used to have a sign on his door: "Who comes in does me honor. Who does not come in gives me pleasure." That rule still applies.

Mussolini finds no relaxation in society. Parties bore him. The Roman social world—which is stupid and very dissolute—he loathes. He often gets angry with Edda and her husband for "sitting around in the bars with those lazy, good-for-nothing loafers, "and is proud of the fact that he has never set foot inside the door of a Roman aristocrat. For the local intelligentsia he has profound contempt.

There is always much gossip in Rome about his love affairs. He has a very powerful appeal for women, can be extraordinarily gracious and courtly if one appeals to him, and for years went from one amour to the next with great rapidity. But all were treated essentially as playthings. They were never allowed to look into his political, and rarely into his personal thoughts. "A woman," he has frequently said, "is like a parenthesis in a sentence. Take out the brackets, and the meaning remains unchanged."

In his own home he is well taken care of. The Donna Rachele, who has never quite been able to realize that she is the wife of the greatest man in Italy, follows him around with a slavish devotion. She knows and cares about nothing except the children and the household. He has tried to educate her, never succeeded, and now has given it up. She dislikes servants and refuses to have more than absolutely necessary. The Villa Torlonia has ten bedrooms, three big living rooms, a dining room, a library and various smaller apartments, but five servants is all that the Donna Rachele will allow. 'I like to take care of Benito myself,' is one of the few statements she has ever made. The Duce worships his younger children — Romano and Anna Maria almost died of spinal meningitis a few years ago. Mussolini was like a man gone mad. He dropped all work and spent whole days at the child's bedside. Some weeks later, when she was recovering, he came to open the new building of the Foreign Correspondents' Association. The newspapermen had chipped in and bought a big doll, which the president of the

association presented to the Duce with a few simple words, for Anna Maria. Mussolini couldn't think of anything to say. He held the doll in his arms, hugged it like a real child, and the tears started to his eyes. Swallowing a couple of times, he turned to Alfieri—the Minister of Propaganda—and -whispered in a choked voice, "You say something. I can't." And turned toward the window while he tried to control his heaving shoulders. All in the room were veteran newspapermen, but there was hardly a dry cheek.

But even in the family happiness of the Villa Torlonia, there is no one to whom he can talk on his own level. And so he has had no cushion against the blows from across the Brenner, the blows which have shattered his ambitions. And he has no dynasty. "I think," he told Emil Ludwig, "that there will not be a second Duce; or that if he appears on the scene, Italy would not put up with him." And with that realization, he is relaxing. Formerly he was never content to issue a decree from the Palazzo Venezia without pages of detailed instructions to the Ministries

concerned for its execution. "I am the only really efficient man in Italy," he once said, perhaps rightly. Of late, he has been deputing more and more authority to Ciano, Grandi, Balbo, and his other satraps. And Italy feels the slackening from one end to the other. Generals complain that they are having difficulty getting army supplies for the conflict in the Balkans which they consider inevitable. Italian diplomats abroad miss the crisp, regular instructions that always guided them. Some very competent observers in Rome think that Mussolini is just holding his hand until he sees the way to jump. But many who are close to Il Duce del Fascismo think otherwise—that Caesar is growing old.

HELPS TO STUDY

The above is selected from "The American Mercury", a famous magazine. The author reveals the Sorrows of Benito Mussolini as well as a lot of secret between Italy and Germany.

VOCABULARY

indisposition 微恙; 身體違和

-
- allude to 提及
breaches of the rule 犯規
tantrums 赫然震怒
Palazzo Venezia (Italian) 意國首相官邸
stomach ulcer 胃部潰瘍(病名)
Il Duce del Fascismo (Italian) 法西斯蒂黨領袖
to hold the reins 掌握政權
appointment 約會
stickler for promptness 堅持敏捷者
out of breath 喘息
pant 喘息而言
scowl 現不豫之色
inaction 不活動;怠惰
loathe 嫌惡
springy 彈跳的
snappy 精神充足的
cogency 使人信服之力
in private 秘密地
insomnia 失眠症
sluice-gate 水門
shaving 剃鬚;修面
camomile 甘菊
phenomenal 不平凡的

-
- strain 用盡氣力;過勞
motorcycle 機器腳踏車
hair-raising (令人)毛髮豎立的
skiing 滑雪
Monte Terminillo(Italian) 德米利諾山
nap 晝間小睡
mouthpiece 代表發言人
Virginio Gayda 人名(墨氏之機關報主持人)
Jim Farley 人名
staggering blow 使人站立不穩之打擊
zenith 極盛時代
Ethiopia 卽阿比西尼亞
went wild 發狂
proclamation 宣言
packed thousands 擁擠的羣衆
Piazza Venezia(Italian) 意國首相府之廣場
skid 在路上滑向一邊
precept 格言
soul-searing (令人)心灰氣餒的
eh bien(French) 信如此
handle 操縱
Chancellor Dollfuss 杜爾夫斯國務總理(奧地利國
執政,被希特勒謀殺)

- Putsch(German) 突擊
- scuttle 急跑
- Fuhrer(German) 領袖(指希特勒)
- Krupp 本為德國一鋼砲製造家之名，現用為兵工廠之名
- armament works 兵工廠
- Ciano 齊亞諾(意國現任外相墨氏之婿)
- fascism 法西斯蒂主義
- a Mediterranean empire 地中海帝國
- The Balkans 指巴爾幹半島諸國
- sphere of influence 勢力範圍
- Olympic Stadium 世界運動會競技場
- Imperium Romanum(Italian) 羅馬帝國
- precipitate 急遽的;突然的
- columns 縱隊
- Vienna 維也納(奧國國都)
- satrap 權臣
- wire(Verb) 打電報
- Crumble 作隆隆聲(言開砲也)
- saw the handwriting on the wall 不祥之兆
- a buffer state 緩衝國
- retard 阻止
- Black Sea 黑海

- Chamberlain 指邱吉爾以前之首相,納菲爾張伯倫
Daladier 達拉第二次歐戰開戰時法國總理
gave way (Idiom) 讓步
undying 永遠的
went into a huddle 陷于惶惑之境
knuckle under 屈服
Chamber of Fasces 法西斯蒂黨議會
Tunisia 突尼斯(法國的保護國)
Corsica 科西嘉(地中海法屬海島)
Djibouti 直布提(非洲法領地)
breathlessly 屏息地;急切地
Palazzo Chigi 意國外相官邸
cue 暗示
double cross 先與甲約欺騙乙而後反欺騙甲之行爲
maltreat 虐待
Bonnet 人名(法當時外交部長)
bellowed 咆哮的
Chamber of Deputies 下議院
salvage 補救
wreckage 破損物(指軸心盟約)
The Axis 軸心(即德義所標榜之同盟)
Berchtesgaden 貝茲加登(德地名)
crumble 粉碎

-
- parrot(verb) 照樣傳話
prestige at home 國內之威望
chubby 矮胖的
patter 以急連輕拍之音而行動
tasseled curtain 有纒之幔
Arturo Bocchini 人名(墨氏祕密警察之領袖)
closest 最接近的
Genes 地名
opportunistic 投機主義的
Angusto Turati 人名(意國要人之一)
Lipari Islands 里巴內羣島
concentration camp 集中營
nip every political intrigue in the bud 將一切政
治陰謀消弭於未成之前
tentacle 觸鬚(此處用作譬喻)
dock 船塢
Genoa 城名，意大利海港之一
reel off 滔滔而談
Abyssinia 阿比西尼亞(又名爲意所亡)
in terms of 就……論；以……計
espresso(Italian) 特別快車
fall back on 依恃
pet crack 最喜歡說的話

-
- misanthropic 嫌惡他人
reserved 緘默的
Dino Grandi 人名(意大利要人)
Italo Balbo 人名(意大利要人)
gabble 饒舌
Edda 人名(墨氏之女)
bar 酒館
good-for-nothing 無用的
loafer 遊手好閒者
intelligentsia 知識階級
courtly 慇懃的
If one appeals to him 假使某一個女人合他的意
amour (非法之)戀愛
plaything 玩物
Donna Rachele 人名(墨索里尼之妻)
slavish 如奴隸的
Benito 墨索里尼之名
Romano; Anna Maria 前者爲墨氏之子;後者爲墨
氏之女
spinal meningitis 脊骨腦膜炎
a man gone mad 瘋人
Foreign Correspondents' Association 外國記者
協會

- chip in 合資
 doll 洋囡囡(兒童玩具)
 hug 緊抱
 heaving shoulders 起伏的兩肩(因啜泣所致)
 cushion 椅子坐墊(此處用作譬喻)
 Emil Ludwig 人名
 Brenner 意奧邊境之山, 過奧則德也
 to issue a decree 發出命令
 the Ministries concerned 有關各部
 depute 委託
 slackening 鬆弛
 crisp 新鮮的
 competent observer 有資格的觀察家

Lesson 38

A Butterfly in the Fog

By Latrobe Carroll

I

Phebe was slight, and so blonde that cream and gold seemed the ingredients of her. She had alert, very sparkling blue eyes, and she laughed with the

effortlessness of brook tinkling over rocks.

Graham Stanford saw her first in Murren. She was spending the summer there with her mother, as she had spent numerous summers in Bar Harbor and Brighton and Dieppe. He had gone to the Bernese Oberland to climb, and stayed on because of Phebe. They would pass each other in the village street, and he would think her delicately attractive, and she would admire his air of distinction and a certain sureness in the way he held himself. At last, at a tentative acquaintanceship of glances which said: "I should like to know you," they succeeded in being introduced.

The highly charged days preceding the war brought them down to Interlaken. Graham spent most of his time in the streets, where there were the latest bulletins and people conversing about the bonne camaraderie of those shipwrecked on a desert island. When he wasn't in the streets, he was with Phebe. Her mother gave no trouble; she was a semi-invalid who allowed her daughter to have her own way because, when she didn't, Phebe wept. So, by a tacit compact, the mother paid all bills and asked

no questions; in return, Phebe saw that her mother's eggs were cooked to the proper gradation between soft and hard.

Graham had interested Phebe at first because she liked Englishmen, and he seemed a very nice one. Together they had taken drives in Phebe's roadster, made long tramps, and stood on mountain tops, isolated in surrounding immensity. A certain massiveness about him gave her a feeling of security. By degrees his personality wove itself into the texture of her nature, became a strand that could not easily be wrenched away.

After a month of good times together, came the war. It permeated the Oberland like an invisible, blighting exhalation. The holiday mood vanished. No one spoke of the scenery now. No one spoke of Switzerland. Most of the tourists scattered to remote lands; few were left in the mournful sunshine and unheeded magnificence of the Alps. Through this new gloom, Phebe flitted, puzzled, unhappy and a little chilled. She was nineteen and unable to comprehend her environment of depression. Worst of all, Graham grew serious. She could have borne

anything but this.

II

On the day that England declared war, Phebe and Graham walked up the path that leads to the top of the Harder. He climbed with restless strides and she kept up with him, panting a little. Now and again he thrust his walking stick into the pine needles on the path. At length, he brought it down fiercely upon a rock with such force that it split.

"Oh, what a pity, Graham," she said. "You've broken your nicest cane." "It was a nice cane," he said, absently. "Filthy mess. That's what it's going to be. A filthy mess. And that England should be drawn into it..."

"It all seems nonsense to me, somehow," said Phebe.

Viciously he cut at the branches overhead with his stick.

"Don't do that, Graham," she remonstrated. "Look, you just snipped off those pretty little baby leaves."

"Oh, damn the leaves!"

She said nothing. Two facile tears sparkled in

her eyes.

They stepped into a little clearing and the Jungfrau appeared, amazingly. Its whiteness was as fresh as the bloom of a flower.

"Funny old fat, cottony Jungfrau," said Graham. "I shall hate to leave it. I can't have a crack at climbing it after all. He spoke of his departure as though she had foreseen it.

The color ebbed from her face. "Graham, you're not going?"

"Of course. They all need me. You see, I've had training with the volunteers. I couldn't stay messing about in Switzerland."

She flushed vividly. "Graham, you're not! It's such nonsense—it's going to be over so soon."

"It may last," he said. "It might last—even a year. In a war like this—"

"Please don't talk about the war," she interrupted. "Let's—" she smiled, "Let's talk about our climb tomorrow, I don't hope it's a day like this."

"Oh, I haven't told you," he said, "I'm going back to England tomorrow."

"Tomorrow?" she turned the word into a little

cry. A listener would have imagined he had struck her.

He nodded. "My train leaves at five in the afternoon."

"Oh," she said faintly.

"Come on, let's tramp," he cried, bounding up.

Never had they walked as on that day. They walked desperately, unheedingly, stumbling over roots, hardly noticing which paths they chose. They didn't speak at all. An old woman, burdened with twigs gazed after them in amazement. Why was this fragile girl, out of breath, almost running up the mountain beside the tall grim man with a split cane?

They were little surprised, at last, to find themselves again in the hotel. Phoebe was white. Stones had gashed the delicate leather of her shoes.

"Are you feeling better?" She asked sympathetically.

He started as her words pierced his abstraction.

"Yes," he said, "but you poor girl! I was mad to set that pace."

"My blouse is wringing wet, and I'm almost

dead."

There in the hallway, before the elevator, they faced each other silently.

"I'm an idiot," he accused himself.

"No, you're not; but can you come with me for a last drive tomorrow?"

Then an absurd thing happened. It must have been the tired droop of her head, or the word, "last," or, perhaps it was the way she spoke, but tears rose to his eyes. It was most embarrassing, he reflected, to be snivelling in a hotel hallway.

He achieved a smile.

"Good. We'll have that last drive."

Then the elevator lifted her from his view.

III

Phebe slept little that night. She thought constantly of Graham and the five o'clock train to Geneva. By early morning she had decided that there was no necessity for his going, and that it would be better for him if he stayed on for a few days with her. She would try to persuade him. But if he persisted—how could she keep him?

She tossed until the bedclothes rolled themselves

into a ball and she got up to unwind them. As she was tucking the corner of sheet under the mattress she had an inspiration which made her feel a little as though she were dropping in an express elevator. Graham must miss his train. She opened her Baedeker and spent a long time adding up distances on the road from Interlaken to Brienz and dividing these by the number of miles the roadster would travel on one gallon of gasoline. It worried her terribly; she had never been good at arithmetic.

IV

In spite of her sleepless night Phebe was in a gay mood the next day. They took the road toward Brienz that skirts the lake, with its overtopping rim of mountains. It was one of those days of unappreciated sunshine which passed in cloudless succession during that tragic August. Phebe drove superbly. On her head she wore a limp vermilion cap which enveloped her hair like a nonchalant flame. With cushioned speed the car drove through the rich meadow air and again plunged into cool forests.

"Isn't it a glorious day?" Phebe said. "And

there'll be lots more like it, and you're not really going away this afternoon, are you, 'Graham?"

He smiled. "I'm afraid I am," he said. "But I've been today with you and—Jove, I've never seen the sky so blue!"

"I wish I had a dress just of that color," she laughed, "Don't you think it would be becoming?"

But he was reviving old memories. "When you were a child," he said reminiscently, "did you ever think that the most delicious life one could possibly lead would be to live on one of those big, ruffled clouds? Your feet would sink into it, a little liking walking on feather pillows and every once in a while you'd come to a torn place where the blue shines through. And those would be lakes, and you'd fish."

Phebe had been listening intently, her face alight.

"How funny," she said. "Because I used to think exactly that thing. And you'd bask all day on its back, wouldn't you, in a sort of sweet dozy dream."

"And you'd never see the black underside when

if rains," said Graham.

A bird, flying low, passed over their heads and darted along the road in front of the car.

"Oh, look!" Phebe shouted. "Let's race it!"

Magnificently the roadster gathered speed under her hand. A blast of wind ruffled Graham's hair and tugged at her vermilion cap.

"Almost up with him," Graham shouted. "Just a bit faster!"

But the bird swerved off the road into the forest. They laughed as their eyes met.

"The beggar didn't play fair!" cried Graham. "I say, you can drive!"

"Can't I, though?"

Neither spoke for a time. Then he gave a little groan.

"What is it?" Phebe asked, startled.

"Something amazing happened then," he said, "I'd forgotten—I'd forgotten about the war."

"Oh, that!" said Phebe. "When we are having such a good time, why bring in the war?" she paused, with pouting lips. "Everybody's been horrid for the last few days," she continued. "Everybody's

been horrid for the last few days," she continued. "Everybody, except mother, and she never knows what's going on. We sit in the dining room of the hotel and in that big room hardly anyone says a word. And when I laugh, it sounds like a cannon and everybody turns around and stares at me. I never saw anything so gloomy in my whole life. And now you begin again." She sounded the horn in a series of discontented little bursts.

"I can't help it," he answered. "I try to, but I can't. Why, do you know, today I've only had one moment when I wasn't feeling as if-I—" Instead of ending the sentence he sighed. "It was when we race the bird, and I forgot."

Phebe turned to him. "Just don't worry about it," she advised. "I haven't worried a bit, except about your going. And do you know what I think about that?"

"What?"

"I think you'd be a perfect goose to go."

He smiled. "Then what on earth am I to do?"

"Wait."

"But don't you see all my friends in it. I'd be

thought an absolute rotter if I wouldn't go."

"But you don't have to fight," she asserted.

"Oh, don't I though, just."

"But why—why not come to America?"

"Oh, don't talk rot," he said.

She tilted her chin defiantly. "I'm not talking rot," she protested, "and I never talk rot, and I don't think you should use that word about me anyway."

"I'm sorry," he said with a smile. There was a silence tempered by the humming of the wind.

Through the gap in the trees, a steamer, far out on the lake, came into view. In its wake hung a low, level stratum of spoiled air. High above it towered the broken ranges that cluster round the Faulhorn. A glade opened before them, rich in ferns and bespattered with sunshine. Then the trees closed in again. The landscape had done its best to pour itself into their thoughts, but neither of them had given it a moment's attention.

"Graham!" said Phebe.

"Yes."

"Won't you stay?"

"See here, Phebe!" he answered impatiently, "I can't stay. The thing's impossible. There are certain things, you know, that one can't do."

Viciously the car leaped forward. Trees and pastures swept by them in a rush of greenery.

"See here," Graham shouted above the wind, "if you aren't careful we'll hit something, you know."

The roadster slackened its pace. Phebe turned blazing eyes on him. "I wish we would," she said vehemently. "I'd just like to hit something!"

He smiled. "It wouldn't be a bad death," he said. "There are worse ways," he added in a voice touched with grimness.

"Listen," she said decisively, "if you talk about the war again I'll put on full speed and this car can go eighty miles an hour and we'll probably kill a child."

He laughed. "To save a child?" he said, "I won't."

But he broke his promise at once.

"Don't you know," he remarked, "it's odd, but all this gives me a queer sort of intoxicated sensation. I've been feeling a bit drunk all day."

"Drunk on war?" she smiled. "What a funny idea!"

"Yes, isn't it?" he asked. "You never heard of it affecting anyone like that, did you?"

"No."

"Hm," he commented, "I must be a rum sort of chap."

"Rum is good," she remarked.

He stared.

"I said rum was good. Silly, it's only a joke."

"Oh," he replied vaguely, and lapsed into silence.

"What are you thinking about?" she demanded, after a time.

"Thinking? Oh, I am, — one might say — readjusting myself."

"Please don't readjust with me. You are awfully dull when you do it."

"Yes, I dare say I am," he admitted frankly.

"You've been dull all day."

"You see, I haven't much tried to be interesting."

"Most of the time," she said as their glances brushed for an instant, "You are without trying!"

He laughed and put his arm about her.

"You are an amusing girl," he said.

For some time she had been hoping he would do just this. She leaned back against his arm with a smile. She appeared to have been constructed for such situations: every particle of her was delicately responsive to moments like these.

"Now you're being interesting for the first time today," she said.

They slipped on through the thick radiance of the summer afternoon. A moth, oddly striped, settled on her arm and clung there as the wind lifted its wings.

What kind of a queer insect is that?" she asked.

"The worst thing about this war——" he began.

"Oh, heaven!" she burst out, "if you only know how I hate to hear you talk about the war. It's too senseless to last—I've heard people in the hotel say it will be over in a month. You'd be too silly to leave, Graham. So, why go to England and arrive, and find it all over?"

"You don't realize," he said, "what England has to face."

"Oh, stop talking about it," she begged. "There wouldn't be any war if people hadn't talked and talked and brought it on."

She reflected, stroking the curve of her chin with a pliant forefinger.

"Oh, Graham," she said at length. "I brought you out to ask you something, and I intended to say it later, but I might as well say it now. You know what it is. I want you to stay on—for me. I'll take you on the longest rides and we'll make all the stunning climbs we planned—"

He interrupted her. "I can't," he said simply.

She was silent. Then:

"What will I do when you're gone?" she asked. "I might as well die—there won't be anything else to do."

He drew a deep, painful breath and let it escape in sigh.

"Oh, Phebe," he said, "it's hard enough for you, but it's not so very hard because you can go back to America and leave it all. But the thing I've been thinking is—I have two younger brothers who will have to go. And there's an end to all the

dreams I've had for those youngsters. So you see——." His voice thickened and died.

"Oh, please don't take it so seriously," she said. "Nothing would hurt if you didn't take anything seriously."

He startled her by laughing. "Jove," he said, "I can't deny that!"

"But it's true, isn't it?" she asked.

"Yes," he said. "You don't know how much good that laugh did. I rather thought I was never going to——again, you know."

She turned off the highway into a narrow road. Branches met above their heads; vivid tatters of the sky blazed through. She had taken off her cap. Her bobbed hair hung in a rich layer from which the intermittent sunbeams struck golden sparkles. Never before had he thought her so daintily luminous. He leaned close and patted her cheek as though she was a child. But Phebe was unresponsive. She listened for a break in the throb of the engine and grew cold. Then in last appeal, an uprush of words overwhelmed her:..

"Please stay, Graham! Oh, please! You can

stay just a few days longer and I'll be so nice to you—nicer than I ever have been, Graham, please don't leave on the five o'clock train!"

"You don't know how I'm feeling, Phebe," he said gravely. His head drooped forward for an instant as though his neck muscles had grown too weak to hold it erect. "If you know how I feel, you'd only be rather sorry for me,"

Phebe listened with trepidation to the pulse of the engine. Presently the car slackened its pace, moved more and more slowly, then came to a standstill.

"Hallo!" he cried. "That's odd. It's never broken down before."

Phebe's voice fluttered as she said: "It didn't break down. It stopped because I didn't put in enough gasoline."

He faced her squarely.

"You don't mean you planned to have it stop?"

She nodded in silent assent, trembling a little.

He gazed at her in amazement. "But you couldn't do a thing like that."

"Yes, I could," she said faintly. She bit the

corner of her handkerchief. "Oh, please don't be mad with me, Graham. It was killing me to have you go today and now you can't. You see—I had just enough gasoline put in to bring us here. I've been here before and we're miles from anywhere."

His face set in grim lines.

"Are you ragging me," he demanded, "or is this true?"

"You can look in the gasoline tank if you want to."

"To think," he said in a voice of detached wonder, "That a girl so sweet could do a thing so stupidly devilish."

He stepped to the road.

"What are you going to do, Graham?" her question was a cry.

"I'm going," he said coldly.

But you can't catch your train."

"I'll catch that train," he said, if I have to run every step of the way. But I may be picked up when I got to the main road."

Phebe looked as though all her blood had turned watery, gray and cold, "Graham, you're leaving

—you're leaving me!"

He took out his cigarette case and stared at it vacantly. Then he found his watch, glanced at it, and began to run up the road.

"Graham," she cried, "Come back—if you love me."

He halted for a moment, without turning.

"Graham, give me—give me something—your cigarette case—something solid to hold and keep."

"When I get down to the road," he called back, "I'll send some one up for you."

He disappeared in a grove of pines. Birds churrupped in the distance and a breeze hissed through the branches overhead.

Phebe wept silently; a slender figure drooped over the steering wheel.

V

Phebe was still in Interlaken when a letter and a package came. They were sent from a hospital in France. The letter was short; it said:

"It is with deep regret that I inform you that Private Graham Stanford died of his wounds this morning at three-thirty. He directed me to send

you the accompanying cigarette case. He wished me to say he did not realize you had asked for it until he was in the train for Geneva. He wished me to say he was sorry.

Yours sincerely,

D. L. Roberts.

Army Hospital Corps"

When Phebe read this, an odd trembling passed over her; she felt ill. She dropped the letter in her lap and gazed about the room. Everything in it seemed strange. Even the dress she wore seemed strange. She opened her eyes wide; an inhabitant of a world she did not understand.

HELPS TO STUDY

Latrobe Carroll, the writer of this short story is a female student at Harvard University, America. She vividly portrays the love between a well-matched but unfortunate couple.

VOCABULARY

Phebe 故事中女主角之名

blonde 白面金髮碧眼的

ingredient 成分

- alert 靈活的
- tinkling 作叮玲聲
- Graham Stanford 故事中男主角之名
- Murren 穆仁(瑞士國一城名)
- Bar Harbor 沙洲港(美避暑之地)
- Brighton 布來屯(市邑名,英避暑地之一)
- Dieppe 第厄普(鎮名,法避暑地之一)
- Bernese 瑞士(百倫區的)
- Oberland 鎮名(屬 Bern 管轄)
- stay on 繼續住下去
- delicately attractive 嬌美動人
- air of distinction 與衆不同之風采
- highly charged days preceding the war 戰前的
那些充滿着火藥氣的日子
- Interlaken 因脫拉根(瑞士一村名)
- bonne camaraderie (French) 深厚的交誼
- a desert island 荒島
- semi-invalid 半病廢之人
- to have her own way 隨心所欲
- a tacit compact 默契
- pay all bills 付所有的賬
- in return 藉以報答
- gradation 程度

-
- take drives 駕車出遊
roadster 雙人座汽車
make long tramps 作遠程之徒步旅行
massiveness 雄偉
wove (past form of the verb, (weave) 織
texture 結構; 組織
strand 繩索之股
wrench away 扭掉
permeate 瀰漫
blighting 使毀壞的
exhalation 惡臭之氣
unheeded 不被注意的
Alps 阿爾卑斯山
flit 不安
comprehend 了解
her environment of depression 使她不快樂的環境
borne (past participle of the verb, "bear")
忍受
Harder 哈德山(瑞士)
with restless strides 以不停之大步
split 拆裂
what a pity! 多可惜!
cane 杖

- filthy mess 一團烏糟
viciously 懷惡意地
remonstrate 規勸
snip off 切斷
damn the leaves! 葉子該死!
clearing 無樹而被開墾之地
Jungfrau 少婦山 (在瑞士境內, 爲阿爾卑斯山之一高峯)
have a crack at climbing it 有少許時間爬山 (it指山也)
flush 臉紅
nod 點頭示諾
faintly 若將昏暈地
bound up 跳起
desperately 拚命地
stumble 顛蹶
twig 嫩樹枝
fragile 嬌弱的
grim 嚴肅的
gash 使有深長之割痕
leather 柔皮
sympathetically 相憐地
abstraction 心不在; 出神

-
- blouse 一種寬鬆的外衣
wring wet 濕透
hallway 門廳
elevator 升降機
accuse 譴責
snivel 啜泣
toss 輾轉
bedclothes 鋪蓋(被褥毯等)
roll 捲
unwind 展開
tuck 摺攏
mattress 褥
inspiration 靈感
Baedeker 旅行指南(Baedeker 所發行)
Brienz 不里恩(瑞士一村名)
overtopping 高聳的
limp vermilion cap 朱紅色軟帽
nonchalant flame 不熾的火燄
Jove 古羅馬之主神,此處用作感嘆詞,“的確”之意
cushioned speed 平穩的速度
reminiscently 回想地
feather pillows 裝絨毛的枕頭
alight 發光的(指有喜色)

every once in a while 時時
bask (曬太陽)取暖
dozy 朦朧的
dart 急飛
race 與…比賽
ruffle 使蓬亂
tug at 力拉
swerve 轉折方向
beggar 可憐的傢伙
play fair 堂堂正正的競爭
pouting lips 努唇
I can't help it 我無可奈何
goose 傻子
on earth 究竟(加重語氣之辭)
rotter (English slang) 無用之人
tilt 使傾斜
defiantly 反抗地
humming 營營之聲
gap 空隙
wake 船行水中所留之跡
stratum 層
tower 屹立
cluster 成羣

-
- Faulhorn 佛羅恩山峯
fern 鳳尾草
bespatter 沾污
vehemently 奮激地
comment 批評
a rum sort of chap 一種怪人 (rum: slang)
thick radiance 強烈的光芒
oddly striped 有奇特的條紋的
clung (past of "cling") 固著
stroke 撫摩
pliant 柔軟的
forefinger 食指
might as well 不如;寧可
stunning 使人家吃驚的
youngster 年幼者(指其弟)
tatter 本為碎布,此處則指樹枝空隙中所見之天空
hobbed 剪短的
layer 層
intermittent 斷續的
sunbeam 太陽光
luminous 容光煥發
cheek 臉
too weak to hold it erect 太軟弱而不能伸直

trepidation	慌張
come to a standstill	停止
flutter	顫動
squarely	嚴正地
rag	愚弄
detached wonder	將信將疑
catch a train	趕上火車
cigarette case	香煙盒
vacantly	茫然地
halt	止步
grove	小樹林
chirrup	唧唧(鳴也)
hiss	作嘶嘶聲
steering wheel	舵輪
package	包裹
private (noun)	兵卒
die of his wound	因傷致死

Lesson 39

The Dark Hour

By Wilbur Daniel Steele

The returning ship swam swiftly through the

dark; the deep, interior breathing of the engines, the singing of wire stays, the huge whispering rush of foam streaming the water line, made up a body of silence upon the the sound of the doctor's footfalls, coming and going restlessly along the near deck, intruded only a little—a faint and personal disturbance. Charging slowly through the dark, a dozen paces forward, a dozen paces aft, his invisible and tormented face bent forward a little over his breast, he said to himself, "What fools! What blind fools we've been!"

Sweat stood for an instant on his brow, and was gone in the steady onrush of the wind.

The man lying on the cot in the shelter of the cabin companionway made no sound all the while. He might have been asleep or dead, he remained so quiet; yet he was neither asleep nor dead, for his eyes, large, wasted, and luminous, gazed but unwinking from the little darkness of his shelter into the vaster darkness of the night, where a star burned in slow mutations, now high, now sailing low, over the rail of the ship.

Once he said in a washed and strengthless voice,

"That's a bright star, doctor."

If the other heard, he gave no sign. He continued charging slowly back and forth, his large dim shoulders hunched over his neck, his hands locked behind him, his teeth showing faintly gray between the fleshy lips which hung open a little to his breathing.

"It's dark!" he said on a sudden, bringing up before the cot in the companionway. "God, Hallett, how dark it is!" There was something incoherent and mutilated about it, as the cry had torn the tissues of his throat. "I'm not myself to-night," he added, with a trace of shame.

Hallett spoke slowly from his pillow.

"It wouldn't be the subs tonight? You're not that kind, you know. I've seen you in the zone. And we're well west of them by this, anyhow; and as you say, it's very dark!"

"It's not that darkness. Not that!"

Again there was the sense of something tearing. The doctor rocked for a moment on his thick legs. He began to talk.

"It's this war——" His conscience protested: "I

ought not to go on so—It's not right, not right at all—talking so to the wounded—the dying—” And all the while the words continued to tumble out of his mouth. “No, I'm not a coward—not especially. You know I'm not a coward, Hallett. You know that. But just now, to-night, somehow, the whole black truth of the thing has come out and got me—jumped out of the dark and got me by the neck, Hallett. Look here; I've kept a stiff lip. Since the first I've said, 'We'll win this war.' It's been a matter of course. So far as I know, never a hint of doubt had shadowed my mind, even when things went bad. 'In the end,' I've said, 'in the end, of course, we're bound to win.'”

He broke away again to charge slowly through the dark with his head down, butting; a large, overheated animal endowed with a mind.

“But—do we want to win?”

Hallett's question, very faint across the subdued breathings and showerings of the ship, fetched the doctor up. He stood for a moment, rocking on his legs and staring at the face of the questioner, still and faintly luminous on the invisible cot. Then

he laughed briefly, shook himself, ignored the preposterous words. He recollected tardily that the fellow was pretty well-gone.

“No,” he went on. “Up to to-night I’ve never doubted. No one in the world in our part of the world, has doubted. The proposition was absurd to begin with. Prussia and her fringe of hangers-on, to stand against the world—to stand against the very drift and destiny of civilization? Impossible!—Man can’t do the impossible; that’s logic, Hallett, and that’s common sense. They might have their day of it, their little hour, because they had the jump—but in the end, in the end!—But look at them, will you? Look at them! That’s what’s got me to-night, Hallett. Look at them! There they stand. They won’t play the game, won’t abide at all by the rules of logic, of common sense. Every day, every hour, they perform the impossible. It’s like clockwork. It’s like a rehearsed and abominable program...”

“Yes—a program.”

The wounded man lay quite still and gazed at the stars. When he spoke, his words carried an

odd sense of authenticity, finality. His mind had got a little away from him, and now it was working with the new, oracular clarity of the moribund. It bothered the doctor inexplicably—tripped him up. He had to shake himself. He began to talk louder and make wide, scarcely visible gestures.

“We’ve laughed so long, Hallett. ‘There was Mitteleuropa! We always laughed at that. A wag’s tale. To think of it—a vast, self-sufficient, brutal empire laid down across the path of the world! Ha-ha! Why, even if they had wanted it, it would be——”

“If they wanted it, it would be——inevitable.”

The doctor held up for a full dozen seconds. A kind of anger came over him and his face grew red. He couldn’t understand. He talked still louder.

“But they are doing it! They’re doing that same preposterous thing before our eyes, and we can’t touch, and they’re——Hallett! They’re damn near done! Behind that line there,—you know the line I mean,—Who of us doesn’t know it? That thin line of smoke and ashes and black blood. Behind

that line they're at work, day by day, month after month, building the empire we never believed. And Hallett, it's damn near done! And we can't stop it. It grows bigger and bigger, darker and darker—it covers up the sky—like a nightmare—”

“Like a dream!” said Hallett softly.

The doctor's boot soles drummed with a dull, angry resonance on the deck.

“And we can't touch them! They couldn't conceivably hold that line against us—against the whole world—long enough to build their incredible empire behind it. And they have! Hallett! How could they ever have held it?”

“You mean, how could we ever have held it?”

Hallett's words flowed on, smooth, clear-formed, unhurried, and his eyes kept staring at the star.

“No, it's we have held it, not they. And we that have got to hold it—longer than they. Theirs is the kind of Mitteleuropa that's been done before; history is little more than a copybook for such an empire as they are building. We've got a vast and more incredible empire to build than they—a Mitteleuropa, let us say, of the spirit of man. No,

no, doctor; it's we that are doing the impossible, holding that thin line."

The doctor failed to contain himself.

"Oh, pshaw! Pshaw! See here, Hallett! We've had the men, and there's no use blinking the truth. And we've had the money and the munitions."

"But back of all that, behind the last reserve, the last shell-dump, the last treasury, haven't they got something that we've never had?"

"And what's that?"

"A dream."

"A what?"

"A dream. We've dreamed no dream. Yes—let me say it! A little while ago you said "nightmare," and I said "dream." Germany has dreamed a dream. Black as the pit of hell,—yes, yes,—but a dream. They've seen a vision. A red, bloody, damned vision,—yes, yes,—but a vision. They've got a program, even if it's what you called it, a "rehearsed and abominable program." And they know what they want. And we don't know what we want!"

The doctor's fist came down in the palm of his

hand.

"What we want? I'll tell you what we want, Hallett. We want to win this war!"

"Yea?"

"And by the living God, Hallett, we will win this war! I can see again. If we fight for half a century to come; if we turn the world wrong-side-out for men, young women, boys, babes; if we mine the earth to a hollow shell for coal and iron; if we wear our women to ghosts to get out the last grain of wheat from the fields—we'll do it! And we'll wipe this black thing from the face of the earth forever, root and branch, father and son of the bloody race of them to the end of time. If you want a dream, Hallett, there's a——"

"There's a——nightmare. An over-weening muscular impulse to jump on the thing that's seared us in the dark, to break it with our hands, grind it into the ground with our heels, tear ourselves away from it—and wake up."

He went on again for a moment.

"Yes, that's it. We've never asked for anything better; not once have we got down on our naked

knees and prayed for anything more than just to be allowed to wake up—and find it isn't so. How can we expect with a desire like that, to stand against a positive and a flaming desire. No, no! The only thing to beat a dream is a dream more poignant. The only thing to beat a vision black as midnight is a vision white as the noonday sun. We've come to the place, doctor, where half a loaf is worse than no bread."

The doctor put his hands in his pockets and took them out again, shifted away a few steps and back again. He felt inarticulate, handless, helpless in the face of things, of abstractions, of the mysterious, unflagging swiftness of the ship, bearing him willy-nilly over the blind surface of the sea. He shook himself.

"God help us," he said.

"What God?"

The doctor lifted a weary hand.

"Oh, if you're going into that——"

"Why not? Because Prussia, doctor, had a god. Prussia has a god as terrible as the God conquering Israel, a god created in her own image. We laugh

when we hear her speaking intimately and surely to this god. I tell you we're fools. I tell you, doctor, before we shall stand we shall have to create a god in our own image, and before we do that we shall have to have a living and sufficient image."

"You don't think much of us." the doctor murmured wearily.

The other seemed not to hear. After a little while he said, "we've got to say black or white at last. We've got to answer a question this time with a whole answer."

"This was began so long ago, he went on, staring at the star. "so long before Sarajevo, so long before 'balances of power' were thought of, so long before the 'provinces' were lost and won, before Bismarck and the lot of them were begotten, or their fathers. So many, many years of questions put, and half-answers given in return. Questions; questions: questions of a power loom in the North Counties; questions of a mill-hand's lodging in one Manchester or another, of the weight of a head tax in India, of a widow's mass for her dead in Spain; questions of a black man in the Congo, of an eighth-

black man in New Orleans, of a Christian in Turkey, an Irishman in Dublin, a Jew in Moscow, a French cripple in the streets of Zabern; questions of an idiot sitting on a throne, questions of a girl asking her vote on a Hyde Park rostrum, of a girl asking her price in the dark of a Chicago doorway—whole questions half-answered, hungry questions half-fed, mutilated fag-ends of questions piling up and piling up year by year, decade after decade.—Listen! There came a time when it wouldn't do, wouldn't do at all. There came a time when the son of all those questions stood up in the world, final, unequivocal, naked, devouring, saying, 'Now you shall answer me. You shall look me squarely in the face at last, and you shall look at nothing else; you shall take your hands out of your pockets and your tongues out of your cheeks and no matter how long, no matter what the blood and anguish of it, you shall answer me now with a whole answer—or perish!'"

"And what's the answer?"

The doctor leaned down a little, resting his hands on the foot of the cot.

The gray patch of Hallett's face moved slightly

in the dark.

"It will sound funny to you. Because it's a word that's been worn pretty thin by so much careless handling. It's 'Democracy!'"

The doctor stood up straight on his thick legs.

"Why should it sound funny?" he demanded, a vein of triumph in his tone. "It is the answer. And we've given it. 'Make the world safe for democracy!' Eh? You remember the quotation?"

"Yes, yes, that's good. But we've got to do more than say it, doctor. Go further. We've got to dream it in a dream; we've got to see democracy as a wild consuming vision. If the day ever comes when we shall pronounce the word "democracy" with the same fierce faith with which we conceive them to be pronouncing "autocracy"—that day, doctor —"

He raised the transparent hand and moved it slowly over his eyes.

"It will be something to do, doctor, that will. Like taking hold of lightning. It will rack us body and soul; belief will strip us naked for a moment, leave us newborn and shaken and weak—as weak

as Christ in the manger. And that day nothing can stand before us. Because, you see, we'll know what we want."

The doctor stood for a moment, a large, dark, troubled body rocking slowly to the heave of the deck beneath him. He rubbed a hand over his face.

"Utopian!" he said.

"Utopian!" Hallett repeated after him. "today we are children of Utopia—or we are nothing. I tell you, doctor, today it has come down to this—Hamburg to Bagdad—or Utopia!"

The other lifted his big arms and his face was red.

"You're playing with words, Hallett. You do nothing but twisted my words. When I say 'Utopian,' I mean, precisely, impossible. Absolutely impossible. See here! You tell me this empire of theirs is a dream. I give you that. How long has it taken them to dream it? Forty years. Forty years! And this wild, transcendental empire of the spirit you talk about,—so much harder,—so many hundreds of times more incredible,—will you have us do that sort of thing in a day? We're

dozen races, a score of nations. I tell you it's—it's impossible!"

"Yes. Impossible."

The silence came down between them, heavy with all the dark, impersonal sounds of passage, the rhythmical explosions of the waves, the breathing of engines, the muffled staccato of the spark in the wireless room, the note of the ship's bell forward striking the hour and after it a hail, running thin in the wind: 'Six bells, sir and—all's well!'

"All's well!"

The irony of it! The infernal patness of it, falling so in the black interlude, like the stage business long rehearsed.

"All's well!" the doctor echoed with the mirthless laughter of the damned.

Hallett raised himself very slowly on an elbow and stared at the stars.

After a while, he broke silence again:

"It seems to me that for days now, for weeks and months now, there's been no sound through the length and breadth of the world, but the tremendous shout of the oppressed—they claim, stubbornly

claim: 'existence, liberty, prosperity—and, above all, a world of permanent peace and security!'"

The doctor moved forward suddenly and quietly, saying: "Lie down, Hallett, you'd better lie down."

To the doctor, charging slowly back and forth along the near deck, his hands locked behind him and his face bent slightly over his breast, there came a sense of justice. "It's our duty to emancipate the oppressed! It's our duty to build a world of permanent peace and security!" he halted and spoke to the vast darkness beyond the ship.

He again walked slowly to and fro. Once he stopped squarely at the foot of the cot and stood staring down at the figure there, faintly outlined, motionless and mute. Sweat stood for a moment on his brow and was gone in the steady onrush of the wind. And he was used to death.

But Hallett had fooled him. He heard Hallett's whisper creeping to him out of the shadow:—

"That's a bright star, doctor."

HELPS TO STUDY

The foregoing story is supposed to happen during the last World War. A ship transporting

wounded soldiers was sailing in the dark in order to escape the attack of German submarines. On board the ship, there were a doctor and an almost dying soldier, Hallett, conversing with each other.

VOCABULARY

- wire stay 鐵絲支持物
footfall 足步
deck 船面甲板
charge 本為迎擊之意,此處指逆風而進
onrush 衝進
cot 帆布床
companionway 艙口之梯
wasted 疲乏的
unwinking 不瞬的
mutation 變化
hunch 隆起
bring up 停止
mutilated 中斷的
I'm not not myself 余精神錯亂
subs (abbreviation of "submarine")
You're not that kind 指 You are not a coward.
zone 指 war zone

-
- keep a stiff lip 緘默
break away 離去
butt 衝過(指逆風前進)
overheated 激怒的
subdued 降低的
fetch up 使停步
preposterous 背理的;荒謬的
well-gone 完全絕望的(此傷兵將死也)
fringe of hangers-on 指奧地利,意大利,匈牙利,諸
國(德盟國)
stand against 對抗
drift 趨勢
have their day of it 有成功之日
play the game 光明正大的決勝
rehearsed 演習純熟的
abominable 可憎的
authenticity 確實
finality 不可及駁性
clarity 清明
oraculer 預告未來的
the moribund 垂死者
trip up 使絆倒
Mitteleuropa 中歐(在汎日耳曼主義上,德國欲用吸

收或征服之手段將其併入大帝國之部份)

wag 滑稽家

hold up 停住

nightmare 令人夢魘之惡魔

sole 鞋底之革

that line: that battle-line

pshaw 咄;噫(表示輕蔑厭惡)

blink 不願;故意避之

contain 抑制

shell-dump 礮彈庫

by the living God 必定(誓語)

inarticulate 不能言語

unflagging 不鬆弛的

willy-nilly 不管是否願意

Israel 猶太民族(指全體言)

Sarajevo; 城名,即一九一四年六月廿八日與國皇子

斐迪南被塞爾維亞人刺死之處,指國際間仇恨問題。

balance of power; (列強之)國際均勢,為英國外交

傳統政策,即不令一強國或一方過于強大也,此指外

交問題。

provinces: 指 Alsace 與 Lorraine 兩省,德法兩國

屢爭之地,指爭奪領土問題。

Bismark and the lot of them: Bismark 為德國

大政治家，號稱鐵血宰相，此指黠武的政治家產生問題。

power loom in North Counties: 英國北部諸郡之機械織機，指工業革命問題。

a mill-hand's lodging in one Manchester or another: Manchester 為英工業都市，此指工人待遇問題。

weight of a head tax in India: 印度人頭稅之重負，指帝國主義榨取殖民地問題。

a widow's mass for her dead in Spain 西班牙一寡婦為亡夫作彌撒祭，政府不許，此指宗教信仰問題。

a black man in Congo: Congo 為非洲比屬殖民地，舊為自由邦，此指黑奴解放問題。

an eighth-black man in New Orleans: New Orleans 為美國一大商業都市，此指黑人與白人混合血統問題。

a Christian in Turkey: 土耳其國之基督教徒，此指回教與基督教衝突問題。

an Irish in Dublin: 都柏林的愛爾蘭人，都柏林為愛爾蘭自由邦之首都，此指愛爾蘭獨立問題。

a Jew in Moscow: 莫斯科之猶太人，昔日俄國壓迫猶太人最甚，此指猶太人被壓迫問題。

an idiot sitting on a throne: 一個坐在皇座上的傻

子，指羅馬尼亞君主昏闇人民欲打倒之，即推翻君主政治問題。

a French cripple in the streets of Zabern: 一九一三年十二月一日一德國軍官在亞爾薩斯洛林之擦伯倫鎮以劍擊一跛工人，德皇太子及其他軍官且獎其所為；此指國際間以強凌弱問題。

a girl asking her vote on a Hyde Park rostrum: 海德公園演講臺上要求選舉權之少女，海德公園為英國倫敦政治活動之場所；此指婦女參政問題。

a girl asking her price in the dark of a Chicago doorway: 芝加哥門口黑暗中索價之少女，按芝加哥為美國娼妓最多之處，此指婦女被賤賣淫問題。

a vein of 一種……的性質

Utopian 語出英作家Thomas More所著之“Utopia,”
此處指幻想的

Hamburg to Bagdad: Hamburg 為德國一海口

Bagdad 為亞洲米索波達米亞中部一城，指任德國建立橫跨歐亞之帝國

twist 曲解

muffled staccato 被閉而使人聽不清的斷續之音

mirthless 無樂趣的

the damned 被判刑罰者

patness 適當

elbow 肘
emancipate 解放
the oppressed 被壓迫者
faintly-outlined 輪廓模糊的
mute 默然的

Lesson 40

With the German Armies

(A War Diary)

By William L. Shirer

Berlin, May 18, 1940. — Going to the front tomorrow. At last will get a chance—maybe—to see how this German army colossus has been doing it, walking through Belgium, Holland, and now northern France, so fast. We leave at 10 A. M. tomorrow, and will first drive to Aachen. Nine in party: four Americans, three Italians, a Spaniard and a Jap.

Antwerp fell today. And while the German northern army is rolling back, the Allied forces in

Belgium towards the sea, the southern army, which broke through the Maginot Line between Maubeuge and Sedan, is driving rapidly towards Paris. A piece in the well-informed (on military matters) *Börsen Zeitung* tonight hints that the German armies now converging on Paris from the northeast may not try to take Paris immediately, as they did in 1914, but strike northwest for the channel ports in an effort to cut off England from France. A second force, it hints, may strike in the opposite direction and try to take the Maginot Line in the east from behind.

German reports admit the Allies are putting up fierce resistance in Belgium and France, but say that they are being "outclassed" by the sheer mass of German metal, especially tanks and airplanes. Perhaps in the next few days I'll be able to see for myself.

Aachen, May 19. — Most amazing thing about this Ruhr district, the industrial heart of Germany, which Allies' planes were to have (and could have, we thought) knocked out in a few days, is that, so far as I can see, the night bombings of the British

have done very little damage.

I thought the night bombings of Western Germany, about the deadly effects of which the BBC has been boasting since the big offensive began, would have affected the morale of the people. But all afternoon, driving through the Ruhr, we saw them—especially the womenfolk—standing on the bridges over the main roads cheering the troops setting off for Belgium and France.

May 20. —We were off shortly after dawn from Aachen, across the Dutch province of Limburg to Maastricht. Little evidence that the Dutch did much fighting here. The houses whole, the windows unshattered. An occasional pillbox showed signs of having been hit by machine-gun fire, but nothing heavier. Apparently the Dutch made no attempt to slow up the Germans by blowing up the road to Maastricht. One bridge over a creek had been damaged—that was all.

7.30 A.M. —Arrived at the Albert Canal. With its steep banks thirty feet high, which the Belgians had cemented to make it impossible to climb them, it was a good defense line, especially

against tanks. Only, the Belgians had not blown up the bridge. I ask a German officer why.

"We were too quick for them," he said. Apparently what happened here and at most of the other important bridges leading to Liège, was that German parachutists rushed the bridges from behind, wiped out the defending machine-gun crews, even overpowered the pillboxes also defending the bridges, and cut the wires leading to the explosive charges in the bridges before the Belgian could set them off. This particular bridge over the canal was protected by a bunker at the Belgian end of the bridge itself, and by two other bunkers lying a hundred yards to the right and left of the bridge. The bunker at the bridgehead must have been taken in the same mysterious way that Fort Eben-Emael was taken at Liège—by parachutists.

Tongres, 7,45. —Here for the first time we suddenly came across real devastation. A good part of the town through which we drove smashed to pieces—Stukas, dive-bombers and artillery, an officer explained. The railroad station was in shambles, obviously hit by Stukas—the trucks all around

torn and twisted, cars and locomotives derailed. One could—or could one?—imagine the consternation of the inhabitants. When they had gone to bed that Thursday night (May 9), Belgium had been at peace with the world, including Germany. At dawn on Friday the German bombers were leveling the station and town. The town itself was absolutely deserted. Two or three hungry dogs nosed sadly about the ruins, apparently searching for water, food, and their masters.

Tirlemont, 8. 30. — A German officer remarks here: "It took us five days to get to Tirlemont. We have come about 100 kilometers from Aachen. Twenty kilometers a day — not bad." I notice that in all that distance I have not seen one bomb crater in the road. I deduce that while German Stukas put the Belgian railroad out of action they were careful not to blow up the roads, or their bridges. Apparently the German Command decided in advance not to try to use the Belgian railways; only the roads. Their army is built to go on gasoline-motored vehicles.

Much evidence of street fighting here in Tirle-

ont. Houses pockmarked with machine-gun bullets; many leveled to the ground by Stukas and artillery.

Louvain, 9. 15. — This ancient university city, burnt by Germans in 1914, is now again—to a considerable extent—destroyed. That is the first impression, and somehow it hits me between the eyes. Block upon block of houses are utter shambles, still smouldering, for the town was only taken two or three days ago.

We drive through the ruins to the University, to the University Library. It, too, was burnt by the Germans in 1914, and rebuilt by donations from hundreds of American institutions of learning. The great library building is completely gutted. The ruins still smoulder.

“And the books?” I asked my commandant, who strikes me more and more like a decent fellow. “Burnt,” he says, “all of them, probably.”

Our commandant takes us to the cathedral and the City Hall. Except a broken window or two, they are untouched. We file into the City Hall. In a long mediæval hall—probably the reception room, for it is in the front—we see immediately

that this has been a British headquarters. On a large table made of unpainted wood are maps, note-pads, whiskey bottles, beer bottles, cans of biscuits with their quaint English labels. They bear evidence that the British were but lately here. A corridor leads off to smaller, inner rooms where British officers seem to have installed themselves. On their desks more maps, French-English dictionaries. On one I notice an artillery manual. The floor of one room is blood-stained.

Steenockerzeel, 12, 30. — Otto von Hapsburg's (former Emperor of Austria-Hungary) castle is an ancient edifice, ugly with its numerous towers and conglomerate outline. Around it is a muddy moat. As we approach we see that a part of the roof has been blown off, and one wall looks shaky; windows broken. Evidently there has been concussion from a high explosive.

The castle, we soon notice, once we are inside, has been plundered. There is evidence that the occupants left in great haste. In the upstairs bedrooms, women's clothes are lying on the floor, on chairs, on beds, as if those who were there could

not make up their minds what dress to take, and did not have the time or the luggage space to take very much. In one room, occupied by a man; books, swaters, suits, golf-sticks, gramophone records, and note-books are scattered about. In the salon downstairs, a large room furnished in horrible bourgeois taste, books and notebooks and china lie in disorder on a large table. An enormous book on bugs has evidently been well thumbed through by someone, perhaps, Otto.

We rummage for a half hour through the rooms. Some of our party are loading up with souvenirs. I pick up a page of English composition which Otto did when he was boning up on his English prior to his recent visit to America. Feel like a robber.

Brussels, 2 P. M. — Brussels has been spared — the one lone city in Belgium that has not been in whole or in part laid waste. The Germans threatened to bomb and destroy it on the ground that the Belgians were moving troops through it and that it was no longer an open city. Perhaps, its rapid fall saved it. Here and there, as you drive through the town, you see a demolished house where

a. stray German bomb fell.

We eat at the *Taverne Royale*, which I often frequented when in Brussels. The place seems to have been taken over by the army. We eat well. Food like this has not been available for years. We pay in marks at the absurd rate of ten francs to one mark. After lunch most of the party go out to plunder with their paper marks, now worth a great deal. They buy shoes, shirts, raincoats, women's stockings, everything.

I go off to find a shop I used to patronize here—not to buy, but to talk. The wife of the patron is tending it. She half remembers me. She is dazed, frightened—but brave. She does not yet realize what has happened. She says: "It came so suddenly. I can't get it straight yet. First the German attack. Then the government fled. We didn't know what was happening. Then Friday (today is the following Monday), about eight in the evening, the Germans marched in." She admits the German soldiers are behaving "correctly."

"Where's your husband?" I asked.

"I don't know. He was mobilized. He went

to the front. I've heard nothing. I only keep hoping he's alive."

A couple of German soldiers sauntered in and bought a half-dozen packages of American cigarettes each. In Germany the most they would have been allowed to buy would have been ten bad German cigarettes. When they had gone, she said:

"I keep the store open. But for how long? Our stocks came from England and America. And my child—where shall I get milk? I've got canned milk for about two months. But after that..."

She paused. Finally she got it out:-

"In the end how would it be? I mean, do you think Belgium will ever be like before— independent, and with our king?"

"Well, of course if the Allies win, it will be like the last time." I gave the obvious reply.

"If, why do they retreat so fast? With the British and the French, we had more than a million men in Belgium. And they didn't hold out as long as the few Belgians in 1914. I don't understand it."

I didn't either, and I left. Back at the restaurant,

where our cars were waiting, some of our party were returning, their arms laden with booty. Many were not back yet, so I wandered over to the Rathausplatz. Above the City Hall, the Swastika floated in the afternoon sun.

May 21, 6: 15 A.M.—Broadcast went off all right. No English bombers. Finally got to the actual front and saw my first battle—along the Scheldt River in Western Belgium. It was the first fighting I had seen since the battle for Gdynia in Poland last September.

About noon we reached Englien and drove to the headquarters of General von Reichenau, commander of the German 6th Army. Headquarters were in a chateau not far from the town. Reichenau, whom I had seen occasionally in Berlin before the war, greeted us upon the porch. He was tanned and springy as ever, his invariable monocle squeezed over one eye. With typical German thoroughness and with an apparent frankness that surprised me, he went over the operations thus far, stopping to answer questions now and then. In a brief cable to CBS scribbled out later from my notes taken during

the interview, I wrote:-

Despite the German successes up to date, R. emphasized to us that the fighting so far had been only an enveloping movement, and that the decisive battle had yet to take place.

"When and where?" I asked him.

"Where," he laughed, "depends partly on what the enemy does. When, and how long it will last, I leave to the future. It can be short or long. Remember the preliminary fighting at Waterloo lasted several days. The decisive battle of Waterloo was decided in eight hours."

R. admitted that "possibly our progress will now be slowed up if Weygand decides to make a great stand. We started this battle absolutely confident. But we have no illusions. We know we still have a battle ahead of us."

R. said the German losses were comparatively small so far:

Someone asked how the German infantry got across the rivers and canals so fast, seeing that the Allies destroyed the bridges pretty well.

"Mostly in rubber boats," he said.

"I've just given permission for you to go to the front," he says. His eyes light up. "You may be under fire. But you'll have to take your chances. We all do."

He turns us to his adjutant, who wines us with an excellent red Bordeaux, no doubt from the cellar below. Then off to the front.

We can hear the guns pounding very clearly now. We speed down the dusty road past endless German columns of trucks carrying troops, ammunition, all-important oil; hauling guns, big and small. The bridge over a stream or a canal at Leuze has been blown up, but German engineers have already constructed an emergency one over which we go.

Finally we stop. A battery of six-inch guns, concealed under trees in an orchard at the right of the road, is pounding away. Now we have a view of the valley of the Scheldt, and can see the slopes on the other side. The artillery thunders, and a second later you see the smoke from the shells on the far slopes. An officer explains they are bombarding the roads behind the enemy lines.

After a while there is a great cloud of smoke

spreading over the far side. I note that over the front all afternoon hover two or three reconnaissance planes—German, obviously directing artillery fire. They cruise above the battlefield unmolested. But there are no planes directing Allied artillery fire. The lack of observation planes alone puts the Allies in a hole.

Berlin, May 24.—Two weeks ago Hitler unloosed his Blitzkrieg in the West. Since then, this happened: Holland overrun; four fifths of Belgium occupied; the French army hurled back towards Paris and an Allied army, believed to number a million men and including the elite of the Franco-British forces trapped and encircled on the Channel.

May 28.—King Leopold has quit on the Allies. Great jubilation here about it. It leaves the British and French, cut off in Flanders, in a pretty hole...

May 30.—The great battle in Flanders and the Artois nears its end. One gathers, though, that the British are taking off a lot of man at Dunkirk. The German goal was to capture those men, and in this they are failing.

June 4. —The German army today entered Dunkirk, and the remaining Allied troops—about 10,000 surrendered.

June 6. —The church bell rang and all the flags were out today, by order of Hitler, to celebrate the victory in Flanders. No real elation over the victory discernible in the people; no emotion of any kind. In grandiose proclamations to the army and the people, Hitler announced that today a new offensive was being launched in the West.

June 11. —Roosevelt came through very clearly on the radio last night. Promised immediate material help for the Allies. Scorched Mussolini for his treachery. Not a word about the speech in press or on radio here.

June 14. —Paris has fallen. We got the news on the radio at 1 P.M. after loud fanfares had blazed away for a quarter of an hour calling the faithful to hear the announcement. Berlin has taken the news of the capture of Paris as phlegmatically as it has taken everything else in this war.

Paris, June 17. —We came in about noon. First shock: the streets were utterly deserted, the

stores closed, the shutters down tight on all the windows... We drove down the rue Lafayette. German army cars and motorcycles, speeding, screaming down the street. But on the sidewalks not a human being. At the various corner cafes along the street which I knew so well they had taken in the tables and drawn the shutters, and had fled—the patrons, the garçons, the customers.

JUNE 18.—Marshal Pétain has asked for an armistice! The Parisians, already dazed by all that has happened, can scarcely believe it. Nor can the rest of us. The inhabitants got the news of Pétain's action by loud-speakers conveniently provided by the Germans in every square in town. I stood in a throng of French men and women in the Place de la Concorde when the news first came. They were almost struck dead.

At 4.30 P.M. the military rushed me out to Compiègne. Yesterday Hitler and Mussolini met at Munich to draw up the armistice terms for France. When we arrived at the scene at 6 P. M. German army engineers were feverishly engaged in tearing out the wall of the museum where Foch's private

car in which the 1918 Armistice was signed had been preserved. Before we left, the engineers had demolished the wall and hauled the car out from its shelter.

Plan is, the Nazis tell me, to place the car in exactly the same spot it occupied in the little clearing in Compiègne forest at 5 A.M. on the morning of November 11, 1918, and make the French sign this armistice there.

The armistice negotiations began at 3.15 P.M. A warm June sun beat down on the great elm and pine trees, and cast pleasant shadows on the wooded avenues as Hitler, with the German plenipotentiaries at his side, appeared. He alighted from his car in front of the French monument to Alsace-Lorraine which stands at the end of avenue about two hundred yards from the clearing where the Armistice car waited.

That Alsace-Lorraine statue, I noted, was covered with German flags, so that you could not see its sculptured work or read its inscriptions.

Through my glasses I saw the Führer stop, glance at the monument, and observe the Reich war

flags with their big Swastikas in the centre. Then he strode slowly toward us, toward the little clearing in the woods. I observed his face. It was grave, solemn, but there was also in it, as in his springy step, a note of the triumphant conquerer, the defier of the world.

Hitler pauses, and gazes slowly around. In a group just behind him are the other German plenipotentiaries. Goring, grasping his field marshal's baton in one hand, wears the sky-blue uniform of the Air Force. All the Germans are in uniform. Hitler in a double-breasted gray uniform with the iron cross hanging from his left breast pocket. Next to Goring are the army chiefs — General Keitel, Chief of Staff of the Supreme Command, and General von Brauchitsch, Commander-in-chief of the German Army. Both are just approaching sixty, but look younger, especially Keitel, who has a dapper appearance with his cap slightly cocked on one side.

Then there is Dr. Raeder, Grand Admiral of the German Fleet, in his blue naval uniform and the invariable upturned collar worn by German naval

officers. There are two non-military men in Hitler's suite—his foreign minister, Joachim von Ribbentrop, in the field-gray uniform of the Foreign Office, and Rudolf Hess, Hitler's deputy, in a gray Party uniform.

It is now 3.23 P.M. and the Germans stride over to the Armistice car. For a moment or two they stand in the sunlight outside the car, chatting. Then Hitler steps up into the car, followed by the others. We can see nicely through the window. Hitler takes the place occupied by Marshal Foch when the 1918 Armistice terms were signed. The others spread themselves around him. Four chairs on the opposite side of the table from Hitler remain empty. The French have not yet appeared. But we do not wait long. Exactly at 3.30 P.M. they alight from a car. They have flown up from Bordeaux to a near-by landing field.

They too glance at the Alsace-Lorraine memorial, but it's a swift glance. Then they walk down the avenue, flanked by three German officers. We see them now as they come into the sunlight of the clearing: General Huntziger, wearing a bleaching

khaki uniform, Air General Bergeret and Vice-Admiral Leluc, both in dark blue uniforms, and then, almost buried in the uniform, M. Noel, formerly ambassador to Poland.

They walk stiffly to the car, where they are met by two German officers, Lieutenant-General Tippelskirch, Quartermaster-General, and Colonel Thomas, chief of the Führer's headquarters.

Now we get our picture through the dusty windows of that old wagon-lit car. Hitler and the other German leaders rise as the French enter the drawing-room. Hitler gives the Nazi salute, the arm raised; Ribbentrop and Hess the same. The German officers give the military salute. The French do the same. I cannot see M. Noel to know whether he salutes or not.

Hitler, so far as we can see through the windows, does not say a word to the French or to anybody else. He nods to General Keitel at his side. We see General Keitel adjusting his papers. Then he starts to read. He is reading the preamble of the German armistice terms. The French sit there with marble-like faces and listen intently. Hitler

and Goring glance at the green table top.

The reading of the preamble lasts only a few minutes. Hitler, we soon observe, has no intention of remaining very long, of listening to the reading of the armistice terms themselves. At 3.42 P.M., twelve minutes after the French arrive, we see Hitler stand up, salute stiffly, and then stride out of the drawing-room, followed by Goring, Brauchitsch, Raeder, and Ribbentrop. The French, like figures of stone, remain at the green-topped table. General Keitel remains with them. He starts to read them the detailed conditions of armistice.

Hitler and his aides stride down the avenue toward the Alsace-Lorraine monument, where their cars are waiting. As they pass the guard of honor, the German band strikes up the two national anthems.

The whole ceremony, in which Hitler has reached a new pinnacle in his meteoric career and Germany, avenged the 1918 defeat, is over in a quarter of an hour.

Berlin, June 27.—To sum up. From what I've seen in Belgium and France, and from the

talks I've had with Germans and French in both countries, with French, Belgian and British prisoners along the road, it seems fairly clear to me that—France did not fight. If she did there is little evidence of it. Not only I but several of my friends have driven from the German border to France and back, along all the main roads. None of us saw any evidence whatsoever of serious fighting.

An Austrian soldier told me last night it was unbelievably simple. They went down the roads with tanks, with artillery support in the rear. Seldom did they meet any serious resistance.

The French blew up many bridges. But they also left many strategic ones standing, especially over the Meuse, a great natural defense because of the deepness, the steepness of the valley and its wooded cover. More than one French soldier I talked to thought it was downright treachery.

D. B. in Paris, having seen the war from the other side, concludes that there was treachery in the French army from top to bottom—the Fascists at the top, the Communists at the bottom. And

from German and French sources alike I heard many stories of how the Communists had received orders from their party not to fight, and didn't.

Many French prisoners say they never saw a battle. When one seemed imminent, orders came to retreat. It was this constant order to retreat before a battle had been joined, or at least until it had been fought out, that broke the Belgian resistance.

On the whole, then, while the French here and there fought valiantly and even stubbornly, their army seems to have been paralyzed as soon as the Germans made their first break-through. Then, it collapsed, almost without a fight. In the first place, the French, as though drugged, had no will to fight, even when their soil was invaded by their most hated enemy. There was a complete collapse of French society and of the French soul. Secondly, there was either treachery or criminal negligence in the High Command and among the high officers in the field. Among large masses of troops, Communist propaganda had won the day. And its message was: "Don't fight." Never were the masses

so betrayed.

HELPS TO STUDY

The foregoing war diary was written by an American correspondent who had gone to the front with the German army.

VOCABULARY

- colossus 巨大之物
 Aachen 亞亨, 城名屬德國普魯士管轄
 Antwerp 安特衛普, 比利時國北部商業都市
 Maubeuge 摩柏日, 法國北部設防之大鎮
 Sedan 色當, 法國東北部一鎮
 Börsen Zeitung (German) 商場日報
 channel 海峽
 outclass 勝過
 Ruhr 魯爾, 西普魯士河名; 魯爾區工業極盛
 B. B. C. = British Broadcasting Corporation 大不
 列顛廣播公司
 Limburg 靈堡, 荷蘭國東南之一省
 Maastricht 馬斯特立喜, 荷靈堡省省會
 pillbox 低圓筒形之鐵筋混凝土堡砦
 Albert Canal 阿爾柏耳運河, 法東北部
 cement (verb) 以水泥凝固之

-
- Liège 列日, 城名, 在比利時東部
overpower 制服
Fort Eben-Émael 愛龐愛麻要塞
Tongres 冬格, 比利時一大鎮名
come across 發見
Stuka dive bomber 史士克俯衝轟炸機
shambles 殺戮之場
twist 使歪曲
locomotive 火車頭
derail 出軌
consternation 驚慌
nose (verb) 以鼻嗅之
Tirlemont 提爾勒蒙, 比利時中部一鎮名
crater 深坑
pockmark 有麻點
machine-gun 機關槍
Louvain 盧芳, 比利時不拉奔省之一城
to a considerable extent 頗甚
smoulder 冒煙
commandant 司令
file into 一個一個的進入
reception room 客廳
note pads 拍紙簿

- whiskey 威士忌酒(麥製)
beer 啤酒
cans of biscuits 餅乾罐
quaint 奇怪的
Steenockerzeel 斯丹諾克塞, 比國一大鎮
conglomerate 密集的
moat 壕
shaky 動搖的
concussion 震動
sweater 汗衫
suit 成套的衣服
golf-stick 高爾夫球棍(擊球時用)
gramophone records 留聲機唱片
bourgeois taste 資產階級的風味
china 瓷器
thumb through 以拇指到處弄污
rummage 搜索
bone up on 對於... 勤勉
souvenir 紀念品
prior to 於... 之前
spare 赦免; 未傷害
laid waste 蹂躪
here and there 到處

- demolish 毀壞
- Taverne Royale (French) 皇家酒店
- available 可用的
- mark 馬克(德國一種貨幣)
- franc 佛郎(法國銀錢)
- shirt 襯衣
- raincoat 雨衣
- get it straight 弄清楚
- saunter 閒蕩
- canned milk 罐頭牛乳
- the Allies 聯合國(當時指英法等國)
- hold out 支持
- laden with booty 滿載戰利品
- Rathausplatz 拉多斯不拉茲,比國魯拾爾城中之名區
- Scheldt River 斯刻爾德江,流經比法荷三國
- Gdynia 格低尼亞,波蘭國一鎮
- Englien 昂格里安,比國一鎮
- General von Reichenau 賴捨閣將軍
- chateau (French) 城堡
- porch 走廊
- tanned 曬黑
- monocle 單眼鏡

CBS = Confederate Broadcasting Station 聯邦廣播電台

播電台

scribble 匆促書寫

Waterloo 滑鐵盧, 比利時之村名, 一八一五年拿破崙
大敗於此

Weygand 魏剛, 二次歐戰繼甘末林任聯軍總司令

to make a great stand 停止前進以拒追兵

take one's chances 任運聽命; 冒險

Bordeaux 法國波爾多地方所產之葡萄酒

pound 作重擊之聲

Leuze 鎮名

hauling gun 可以拖拉之礮

emergency 應急

enemy lines 敵入陣地

artillery observation post 礮兵觀測哨

hover 飛翔

reconnaissance plane 偵察機

put the Allies in a hole 使聯軍陷於窘境

unloose his Blitzkrieg 展開其閃擊戰

hurled back 被逐退

trapped 墮入陷阱

encircled 被包圍

King Leopold 利歐波爾德王

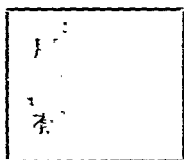
- quit 脫離
 Flanders 法蘭德斯, 比利時省名
 Artois 亞多亞, 法國昔曾置省
 Dunkirk 敦克爾克, 法國北部海口
 gather 推測
 elation 意氣揚揚
 discernible 可辨別的
 grandiose 誇張的
 proclamation 宣言書
 scorch 痛罵
 Musso: abbreviation of Mussolini
 fanfare 祝勝之歡聲 (French)
 phlegmatically 冷淡地
 rue Lafayette (French) 拉菲倚愛德路
 sidewalk 人行道
 garcon (French) 侍僮
 Marshal Pétain 貝當元帥 (法國自議和以來之領袖)
 armistice 休戰
 loud-speaker 擴音送話機
 Place de la Concorde 康可方場, 巴黎市某兩街衢
 相交之處
 Compiègne 康邊, 鎮名
 draw up 起草

- terms 條件
- museum 博物館
- Nazi (德國)國家社會黨黨員
- elm 榆樹
- plenipotentiary 全權大使
- Alsace-Lorraine 亞爾薩斯洛林,一九一九年德割於
法茲已奪回
- Goring 戈林,德航空部長兼普魯士總理,希特勒繼承
者baton 司令杖
- General Keitel 蓋德爾上將
- Chief of Staff of the Supreme Command 最高
統帥部參謀總長
- General von Brauchitsch 勃魯齊區上將
- dapper 短小精悍的
- Raeder 萊愛德(德國要人之一)
- Grand Admiral of the German Fleet 德國海軍
總司令
- collar (衣服之)領
- suite 隨員
- foreign minister 外交部長
- Joachim von Ribbentrop 約阿與里賓特羅甫
- field gray 第一次歐戰時德軍制服之灰色
- Rudolf Hess 路多夫赫斯(德國社會副領袖)

- chat 閒談
 flank 在側
 General Huntziger 漢錫奢將軍
 wearing a bleaching khaki uniform 穿漂白卡機
 布制服
 Air General Bergeret 空軍上將柏黑奢勒
 Vice-Admiral 海軍中將
 Lelue 勒笠(法國要人)
 Noel 納愛(法國要人)
 quartermaster-general 總軍需官
 Tippelskirch 第勃斯漆希
 lieutenant-general 陸軍中將
 colonel 陸軍上校
 Thomas 多摸斯
 national anthem 國歌
 pinnacle 頂點
 meteoric 雖顯赫而為時甚短的
 Meuse 謬司, 河名, 流經法國東北部與比荷兩國
 win the day 戰勝

A Wartime English Reader

戰時英文讀本



編纂者 許 祖 惇

發行者 東 南 書 局

吉安上永叔路二一三號

代表人 朱 達 之

印刷者 江西合羣印刷公司

贛縣壽量寺五號

經售者 全 國 各 大 書 局

實價每冊 元

(外埠酌加郵運匯費)

中 華 民 國 三 十 二 年 七 月 第 一 版

江西省圖書雜誌審查處審查證贛圖字第三四三號

1512000^D 